XEROX

Xerox University Microfilms
Ann Arbor, Michigan 48106

WESTERN AMERICANA

Reproduced from the original in the collection of
THE HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY AND ART GALLERY

LETTERS

FROM

AN EARLY SETTLER OF TEXAS.

BY W. B. DEWEES.

COMPILED BY CARA CARDELLE.

LOUISVILLE, KY.,
MORTON & GRISWOLD,
1852.

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1853, by
W. B. DEWEES,
in the Clerk's Office for the District Court of Texas.

Stereotyped and Printed by
MORTON & GRISWOLD,
Louisville, Ky.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

PREFACE, ... PAGE vii

LETTER I.

Description of a Journey from Nashville, Tennessee, to Long Prairie, Arkansas, ... 9

LETTER II.

A five months Buffalo Hunt to the Cross Timbers on Red River—A Camp Meeting—Osage Indians—Face of the Country—Inhabitants, ... 15

LETTER III.

A Trip from Jonesborough to Nacogdoches—Sufferings—Being relieved by the Caddo Indians—Town of Nacogdoches—Inhabitants—Location—Return to Jonesborough. 19

LETTER IV.

Trip from Jonesborough to the Brazos river in Texas—Hunting Buffalo and Wild Cattle—The Prairies. 23

LETTER V.

Arrival at the Colorado—The Scenery—A vessel robbed at the mouth of the river—Journey to San Antonio de Bexar with a Prisoner, ... 26

LETTER VI.

Engagement with the Carancoway Indians—Scalping an Indian—Their skillful use of Bows and Arrows—Narrow Escape, . 37

LETTER VII.

Sufferings of the Settlers—Kindness of the Toncoway Indians—Approach of warlike Indians—A Treaty—A War Dance—Departure of the Indians, ... 43

LETTER VIII.

Grants to Colonists—News of Invasion by the Carancoways—Expedition to meet them—Engagement—Indians repulsed—A Storm—Description of the Country—A Murder by Robbers—Arrest of the Robbers, and execution of one of them—Another Battle with the Carancoways—Treaty, ... 49

LETTER IX.

Travels in Mexico—Manners and Customs of the Mexicans—A Fandango—Their system of Warfare—Trial of skill in Shooting—Mode of Traveling, ... 55

LETTER X.

Travels in Mexico—Description of the Country—Exports—Churches—Burial of the Dead—A Fair, ... 63

LETTER XI.

Revolution in Mexico—Pope's Bull against Masonic Societies—Unsuccessful attempt to erect Texas into a Republic—Constitution of the Mexican United States, ... 63

LETTER XII.

Empresarios of Texas, and a History of the settlement of the Colonies of Texas, ... 12

LETTER XIII.

Trip to Bexar—The Author's Wife resolves to accompany him—Incidents on the road—Safe return—Alarm from the Indians—Successful attack upon an Indian Village of one thousand inhabitants—Spoils obtained—Return home—Scarcity of Provisions—Anecdotes of an Englishman, ... 119

LETTER XIV.

General Description of Texas—Soil and Climate—Murder and Robbery by the Indians—Capture and Execution—Murder of Earle by Deshay—Arrest—Death of Deshay in prison, - - - 128

LETTER XV.

Manners and Customs of the Texans—Anecdote—Desecration of the Sabbath—Wild Horses—Colonization Law, - - - 134

LETTER XVI.

Danger of War with Mexico—Aggressions—Martial Law proclaimed—Collision between the Mexicans and Texans—Address of the Ayuntamiento—Meeting of the people at San Felipe de Austin, 141

LETTER XVII.

Austin imprisoned—Trouble with the Indians—Rock of Metal—Disastrous result of a visit to the Rock, - - - - - 146

LETTER XVIII.

Columbus—Demand of the Mexicans for the cannon at Gonzales—Repulse of the Mexicans—Battle of La Bahia—Battle of the Conceptions—Skirmishes—Capture of San Antonio, and death of Col. Milam—Gloomy prospects, - - - - - - - - - 153

LETTER XIX.

Provisional Government formed—Difficulties between the Governor and the Council—Address to the People—The Governor sustained—Declaration of Independence—Letter from Col. Travis—Texan Army in danger—Proclamation of the Governor—Army Orders—Second Letter from Col. Travis—Fall of the Alamo—Massacre of Fannin's Troops—Retreat to the Colorado—Houston's Address to the Army—Anecdote of a Texan Woman—Victory of San Jacinto, and Capture of Santa Anna and his Army—Gen. Houston's account of the Battle—Condition of the Country, - - - - - - - 160

LETTER XX.

A Sketch of "the Runaway Scrape,"—Army Orders—Houston elected President. - - - - - - - - - - 203

LETTER XXI.

A Perilous Journey to Gonzales—Santa Anna, ... 211

LETTER XXII.

Waters of Texas—Prairie Sunset, ... 217

LETTER XXIII.

Indian Depredations—Internal Improvements, ... 223

LETTER XXIV.

Cherokee War—Burning of Linville—Battle of Plum Creek 230

LETTER XXV.

Failure of Texas Money—Seasons—Santa Fe Expedition, 235

LETTER XXVI.

Bascus' Invasion—Court at San Antonio taken prisoners—Battle of Salado—Massacre of Dawson's men—Somerville's campaign—Texans taken prisoners at Mier, ... 242

LETTER XXVII.

Overflows—Produce—Return of the Prisoners, ... 247

LETTER XXVIII.

Annexation—Constitution of the State of Texas, . . . 252

LETTER XXIX.

Produce of Texas in different latitudes—Farming—Stock Raising—Professional Men, ... 298

LETTER XXX

Prosperity of Texas—Population—Education, ... 304

PREFACE.

In the present day so many of the inhabitants of the old world, as well as of the new, are turning their attention from their lands worn out by constant tillage, to the flowery gardens of the sunny south-west, that a history of that country has long been desired, and will prove highly interesting. Many have undertaken to give this history to the world, but their accounts have been so incorrect as to prove of little value. In fact, a true history of Texas, though much needed, has never yet been written. At present, but few are willing to undertake that upon which so many have failed.

A short time since, I chanced to find, among the papers of a worthy friend, a large pile of letters from Texas, some of them bearing an early date in the history of that country. I opened them and commenced reading—soon I became deeply interested. Many events in the history of Texas, before hidden and mysterious, now became clear to me. I read on, and my attention became more and more deeply engrossed. I followed my author through all the changes and revolutions of Texas; through all his sufferings in the tented field; and all his pleasures in the season of peace. Some new delight constantly unfolded itself to my mind; and when I finished the letters, I felt that I had obtained more information from the private letters of a gentleman to his friend, than I had ever been able to gain from all the works on Texas which have been yet published.

At length it occurred to me, that, perhaps, what had afforded me so much pleasure and information in my lonely hours, might prove of advantage, if presented to the world. I sought and obtained leave to publish them. I give them as they are, from the pen of the author, lest by revising and correcting, some gem should be lost or some beauty marred.

If the diction of the author is not sufficiently elevated and beautiful, to suit the taste of a fastidious reader, it must be remembered that these letters were not written for the eye of a critic, but in that free, easy, and familiar style, with which friend addresses friend. He makes no pretensions to being a man of literary acquirements, but rather rejects the idea—having left his native country when a mere boy, to receive his education in the school of adversity. He has spent the greater part of his life in the new country, on the frontiers, exposed to all the perils of war, and the dangers of settling a wilderness. He has passed through that which might cause many a stout heart to quail; yet through all, he never seems discouraged, nor inclined to repine at his lot. He has at last grown gray in the service of his country, and among the rugged settlers who ever people a wilderness; and now he is permitted to enjoy the blessings of that peace for which he so long looked, so long hoped, and has but lately found.

It is to be hoped that the public will look upon the imperfections of this work with an indulgent, lenient eye. Let them bear in mind that the author does not propose giving a history of Texas, but in his letters to his friend, states facts as they are, without coloring or embellishment. What passed under his own eye, that he describes, and attempts no more. He narrates the history of the principal events which have occurred in his country since its first settlement was commenced by STEPHEN F. AUSTIN, up to the present time. This is done merely to meet the eye of a friend, and not the world at large. If beauties and merit are discovered in the work, we shall be pleased; but if blemishes, we beg the public will pass them lightly by, reflecting, that our author, had he thought his friendly epistles would ever have been exposed to the gaze of a fastidious world, would doubtless have been more particular in his manner of style, though more truthful he could not have been.

CARA CARDELLE.

Kentucky, January, 1852.

LETTERS FROM AN EARLY SETTLER IN TEXAS.

LETTER I.

Long Prairie, Ark., March 1, 1819.

My Dear Friend:—Agreeably to promise, I take this the first opportunity to give you a description of my travels, since I left my home in Kentucky. I took water on board a large keel boat at Nashville, Tennessee. We sailed down the Cumberland river, into the Ohio, and thence into the Mississippi. This part of the voyage occupied about a week. The scenery on the banks of the Cumberland is very pleasant. There are but few villages on this river, and these few are small. The most important is Smithland, situated at the mouth of the river. It probably contains about two hundred inhabitants. As I did not stop in this place, I am unable to give you a description of it. After leaving the Cumberland river, we proceeded down into the Mississippi; on this river there are but few inhabitants. Most of them were pale-faced, sickly looking people, apparently fishermen and wood-choppers. After traveling about a week on this river, we arrived at a place called Chickasaw Bluffs. This is a small village, containing some ten or fifteen inhabitants. About three days after leaving the Chickasaw Bluffs, we reached the

Walnut Hills, on the east bank of the river. We could see these hills at about the distance of two miles. They are elevated seventy-five or one hundred feet above the common level of the river. Although it was in the winter season, the grass was perfectly green. The scenery was certainly enchanting! I wish you could see them! I know you would be delighted. Oh! that I had the pencil of the painter, or the pen of the poet, that I might give you a description of these charming hills! The country surrounding these hills is covered with a thick growth of timber. From the midst of the timber rise these hills covered with a carpet of the richest green. Indeed I could think of nothing but our old Kentucky wheat fields.

After leaving the Walnut Hills, we saw nothing worthy of note until we reached Natchez. Here we remained about a week. Natchez is a very beautiful town, situated on a high bluff, except a small portion of it, which is on the bank of the river, under a hill. I have often heard of dissipation, but I never saw it in its nakedness till I came to this place. It would fill you with perfect horror, were I to describe to you the fighting which is carried on between the boatmen and the citizens of "Natchez under the hill." Indeed my pen would fail in the description of it. No one can conceive the horrors of this place unless they themselves have witnessed the scenes. Here you might see men, women, and children mingling together in every species of vice and dissipation; the very thoughts of which is enough to sicken the heart.

The vessels upon this river consist in part of barges and keel boats; but mostly of upper country flat boats, (generally called broad-horns,) and chicken thieves. With these you are already familiar, and a description is unnecessary. But while at Natchez I saw a steam-boat. I spent some time on board examining this boat. I wish I could convey an adequate description of this craft. It is, as you of course know, propelled by steam, and moves through the water with great rapidity. I think this invention of Robert Fulton will eventually prove to be of great advantage to this part of the country, and I hope the time will soon come, as I firmly believe it will, when they will take the place of the vessels which are now occupied in navigating this majestic river. Nor do I think I am too sanguine when I say that in twenty-five years from now, whoever lives to see that time, will find steam navigation to be the most common mode.

After leaving Natchez, we proceeded down the Mississippi to the mouth of the Red river. On this part of our journey we saw a few large plantations. The banks of the river below Natchez are much more thickly inhabited than above. The scenery on the banks of the river is truly delightful, but I did not much like the looks of the river itself, it has such a dirty, turbid look. True, I was prepared to expect this, but for all that I was disappointed. I did not like to think that our most noble stream presented such an unpleasant appearance. But so we ever find it in this life! It is not the most beautiful that is the most noble; nor is it always in the fairest countenance that we find the most ennobling qualities of the heart.

After entering Red river, we found our labors very toilsome; on account of our boat being a large, family boat, crowded with women and children, we found it very difficult to row and push up stream. However we got along very well, though slowly, until we arrived at the Big Raft. On our way we passed the thriving towns of Alexandria and Natchitoches. At Alexandria we were detained about four days in rigging a windlass to pull our boat over the Rapids. These Rapids are a ledge of rocks running across the river, over which the water falls perpendicularly to the depth of three feet.

The coast of Red river from the mouth up to Alexandria is inhabited mostly by Creole French. Some of these are very wealthy planters. The land is very rich, producing cotton and sugar in great abundance.

Our course through the raft was very slow and toilsome. The distance is about ninety miles! We were thirty days in making this distance. Ours is the only boat of any size that has ever passed through the raft. Had we not been so fortunate as to secure the services of a Caddo Indian, who had passed through before, as a guide, we should most certainly have been lost.

I hardly know how to give you a description of this raft; but perhaps you can get the best idea of it by imagining yourself in a large swamp, grown up with trees and filled up with drift-wood, wedged in very closely, the water having no particular current and running in no particular direction. During the thirty days we saw land but two or three times, and then only some small islands. At night we tied our boats to a tree and remained till morning. Sometimes we would come across lakes two or three miles in extent and then again we would spend a whole day in moving not further than the length of the boat.

But I must not forget to tell you of the immense quantity of bee trees which we found in this raft. At any time we could go in our "dug out," and return laden with a large quantity of honey, which we found truly delicious.

While passing through the raft a circumstance of melancholy interest took place. A Mrs. Reddeford, from Tennessee, one night when we were all asleep, went out upon the running boards and fell overboard. The sound of her falling awoke some one of the boat's company, who instantly gave the alarm. A young man and myself ran immediately to the stern of the boat and saw her rise. We plunged into the water and swam to the place where we saw her rise, just then she rose again a few yards below. We swam to that place and by reaching down I felt her hair floating in the water. With the assistance of my friend I swam with her to the boat. She was apparently lifeless, but by laying her stomach on a flour-barrel and rolling it, we succeeded in bringing her to life. Since then there has been a strange, wild look about her eyes, though she is now perfectly well.

After we were safely through the raft, we had no difficulty in getting to this place, which is only about a three days' journey. The country from Natchitoches to this place is generally uninhabited, except by a few Indians. The bottom is heavily timbered, large cane brakes, and mostly low rich land.

Perhaps there is nothing that strikes the eye of a Kentuckian with more surprise than the long moss hanging from the branches of the trees. This pendant parasite as it sways to and fro in the wind gives to the landscape a peculiarly melancholy and sombre appearance, and frequently it even darkens the air.

On the banks of this river there are a great quantity of very large alligators, which, by the by, are very dangerous, as they frequently drown dogs, horses and even men.

Long Prairie is the first large prairie on Red river, from the mouth up. It bluffs to the river, runs back fifteen or twenty miles, and is surrounded by a heavily timbered country. The land is very rich. At the present time, the prairie is covered with a carpet of rich verdure, here and there interspersed with beautiful wild flowers. The population of this part of the country consisted of two families previous to our arrival. As to the health of the place I know but little, having been here but a few days; but from appearances I should not judge favorably of it. Here I saw for the first time a person shaking with the ague. I supposed the person to be dying, but was told it was nothing but the ague.

I am expecting to leave this place in a few days for Mound Prairie, some one hundred and fifty miles further up the river, from which place I will write you again.

Till then adieu. Your affectionate friend,

W. B. D.

LETTER II.

Jonesborough, Ark., Feb. 15, 1820.

Dear Friend.—I have just returned from a five months' buffalo hunt. After arriving at Mound Prairie, I was taken sick, and lay for six months unable to do anything. As soon as I was able to ride, I joined a party of about thirty men, who were going up Red river to the Cross Timbers on a buffalo hunt. It is unsafe to go in smaller companies on account of the Osage Indians, who are very hostile to us. My health improved rapidly, and I found the trip very agreeable. The country through which we passed, is one of the most beautiful I have ever seen. It consists of large beautiful prairies, except on the water courses which are well timbered. The prairies are so large and level as to prove very deceptive to the eye. To illustrate this, I will tell you, that we frequently on rising in the morning would see the smoke ascending from fires which the Indians had kindled, apparently but a short distance from us, and by dint of hard riding we would only be able to reach them by night.

Our encampment during the winter was at the Tallow Cash Hills, a short distance below the mouth of the Fo Washitaw river. The company were engaged in salting up buffalo meat to take down the river to New Orleans. Strange as it may seem to you, we have lived entirely upon the game which we took in the chase, during the five months that we have been gone. In fact, we did not see a mouthful of any kind of food but buffalo and bear meat while we were out, and a more rugged, healthy set of men you never saw in your life. One might suppose, as we were dependent upon our rifles for our daily food, that we were sometimes placed on short allowance for fresh meat. But it was not so! We could see large herds of buffalo in any direction to which we turned the eye. It was with perfect ease that we rode out in the morning, killed a horse load of buffalo meat, and brought it into camp. We had frequent encounters with the Osage Indians, but our company being large we did not fear them. They are only to be dreaded when they catch two or three men alone, as they are so swift of foot as to be able to run down almost any horse and catch him and its rider.

The country above this place, so far as I have been, is very beautiful, with rich lands, finely timbered and well irrigated. It has the appearance of being a very healthy country, but as it is entirely uninhabited, I am unable to say with certainty as to that. Below this place is one of the most sickly regions I have ever known.

But a few words now for the society that inhabits this new country. We are a motley crew, emigrants from all parts of the world, and of course have all kinds of people, good and bad! but the bad seems to predominate. We had a kind of camp meeting a few days since about six miles below Jonesborough, on the opposite side of the river, and just below the mouth of Clear Creek. I had not been at church since I left Kentucky, and thought I would go down, for I was always fond of going to church. There were at the camp ground, three ministers and a considerable congregation for a new country like this. About two hundred yards from the camp ground there was a large, cool spring. Here was a large party most of the time, who had plenty of the "swate craythur," even by the keg full. On the third day there was a considerable excitement at the stand; some persons professed conversion, and there was a good deal of shouting. When the drinking party heard this, they also commenced shouting from the spring. One person screamed out at the top of his voice, "run here, boys, I have found him!" "You have found who?" responded another. "Why him of whom Moses and the prophets did write," replied the first. On hearing this the ministers sent down a remonstrance, which so enraged our drinkers that they procured an ax, and came up to the camp ground with the determination of cutting down the stand. The ministers made their escape therefrom, and the drinking party had nearly leveled it, when they became reconciled through the interference of some of the congregation. After this the meeting went on regularly, and in fact became quite interesting. At present all is quiet about Jonesborough, and the camp meeting and all the excitement seems to have been forgotten.

By the way, I had nearly forgotten to tell you of a rather amusing adventure which I met with while on my buffalo hunt. Gabriel Martin, and five others with myself, left the station camp one morning to go down the river, bear hunting for a day or two. While we were absent, a heavy storm of rain and sleet, together with a furious "norther" overtook us. We were with out camps, and had nothing to protect us but our blankets. Night came on, and we encamped by the side of a large tree, which had been blown down by the wind. Close by this tree we built fires, and looked around for some dry place for our guns. We found a part of the tree was hollow so we placed our guns within, and laid down to sleep. At midnight we were awakened by the firing of guns; some one of the company cried out "Indians," upon which we all fled and took refuge in the timber, behind some large trees. Hearing no further alarm we at length ventured back, when we found that our fire had burned into the hollow tree, during the time we were asleep, and had reached our guns. Four of these were burned up, the explosion of which had caused the alarm. The remaining three were saved. This is the only time I have ever been run off from camp by any alarm.

This buffalo trip, which, in the first place, I had started upon merely to pass away the time, eventually proved of advantage to me. When I left Mound Prairie I was in miserable health, but my health has never been better than while on this excursion. Besides this, on my return, there being but three of us in company, Andrew Robertson, John Hampton and myself, we traveled on the banks of the river to have the benefit of the timber, as we dared not travel in the open prairie on account of the Indians. One evening we had just encamped when we discovered a large herd of Mustangs searching for water, the water-courses being at that time all frozen over. We crawled up to them and succeeded in creasing a fine, large horse, which we sold on our arrival at home for ninety dollars; which you know is some object with a poor boy like me, in a strange country.

Your affectionate friend, W. B. D.

LETTER III.

Pecan Point, Ark., June 10, 1821.

Dear Friend:—Perhaps you may be surprised at my long silence, but if you know anything of the life of an adventurer in a new country, you will of course excuse me. About twelve months since, I left this place in company with Mr. Nicholas Dillard to travel towards the west. As we anticipated the trip would be a long one, we started on foot. Our outfit was about half a middling of bacon, an old rifle gun, and our blankets. It was our intention to travel on the old Tramel trace, leading from Pecan Point to Nacogdoches. When we had been on our journey about three days there came on a terrible storm. It rained incessantly, for seven or eight days, and every river, creek, and stream rose till the country was completely overflowed. We were unable to find the Tramel trace, and were therefore obliged to take one of our own. We traveled on some eight or ten days, and were every day obliged to cross some of the streams on a raft of our own construction. Our mode of constructing rafts was by getting together two or three logs and tying them with grape vines. During this time we had entirely consumed our bacon, and in consequence of having to swim water courses we had so damaged our ammunition as to render it of no benefit to us. We were in a country where we were entirely unacquainted; with no road, no compass, and on the point of starvation. Our case seemed to be almost hopeless, but we still kept on, determined if possible to find relief, and travel as long as we were able.

One evening when we were about to give up in despair, we chanced to fall in with a party of Caddo Indians, who were out on a hunting excursion. These Indians treated us with great hospitality, and the next day took us with them to their village, which was only a few miles distant. There we remained four or five days to recruit. We gained strength rapidly, our fare being of a very strengthening nature. Our subsistence was principally upon meat killed in the chase, and a kind of lye hominy seasoned with hickory nut kernels. This we became remarkably fond of. From the Indians we obtained fresh supplies of provisions and ammunition, together with directions for our route. We then left the village, proceeding on the course which the Indians had directed us. After traveling four or five days, we reached the Sabine river, where we found a few Anadarko Indians, a few French, and two American families. With these we remained two or three weeks. We purchased a couple of Indian ponies, and recommenced our journey to Nacogdoches, about seventy-five miles further west.

Nacogdoches is an old Spanish town, situated on the

San Antonio and Louisiana road, about sixty miles west of the Sabine river, in the State of Coahuila and Texas. In the revolution between old Spain and Mexico, in the year 1812, it was entirely abandoned by the Spaniards, and is at the present time settled by the Spaniards, French, Americans, and free negroes. The whole population amounts to about one hundred. The town was nearly destroyed in the revolution of 1812, since which it has not been rebuilt, and of course is a very desolate looking place. The buildings consist of a large stone church, another large stone building with eight or ten apartments in it. What it was constructed for, I am unable to say, but at the present time it is occupied by several families. The remainder of the buildings are adobes, except a few which are made of wood. The place is under the control of the Mexican government. Mr. Dill is Commandant of the place. The location of the place is very beautiful, slightly elevated, surrounded by a heavily timbered country, and well watered. It is from all appearances a very healthy section of country.

A great many very interesting circumstances took place during my stay in Nacogdoches, one of which was of painful interest. A gentleman who had been into Mexico on a traveling expedition, came into the place and presented himself to the Commandant, telling him that he deserved death, and desired he should hang him. The Commandant believing the man deranged, commenced interrogating him, asking why he wished to be hung. He replied that he had been into Mexico with his partner trading, and on his return he had murdered his companion, taken his money, and sunk his body in the Angelina river, about twenty miles distant. The Commandant told him to go away and not trouble him, he was certainly crazy and he would not listen to him. He still insisted that he would not leave—that he should be executed; he did not wish to commit suicide, nor yet to live, and if the Commandant still disbelieved him if he would send some men with him he would show them where he sunk his comrade. To this the Commandant agreed! Some five or six persons accompanied him to the place, where they found the body as he had said they would. Upon their return, the Commandant called a few persons together to witness the solemn scene; took the man out behind the old stone building, and there, according to the man's request, hung him upon a tree till he was dead.

During my stay in Nacogdoches, I learned that Mr. Moses Austin, of Missouri, had received permission from the Mexican government, to establish a colony in the State of Coahuila and Texas. We then made immediate preparations to return to this place, having determined to join Austin in this enterprise. Our journey back was very pleasant! the roads having been improved during our stay in Nacogdoches, we were enabled to perform it on horseback. On our return we found some Delaware Indians had settled on Boggy Creek while we were gone. Of this we were very glad, as we were rather short of provisions. We remained with them a day or two and obtained sufficient provisions for the rest of the journey. These were the only persons we saw on our route.

The country through which we traveled is an almost unbroken forest. The timber is generally pine and hickory, except in the valleys and bottoms, where we found oak of different kinds. The country is quite rich for an upland country, well watered, and has the appearance of being healthy.

When we arrived at this place we found several families had heard of this enterprise of Austin's, and they are now making preparations to join the colony. Of this, I am very glad, as it will render the trip more pleasant to me. We shall probably start in a few days. If I like the country I intend to remain there, as I am tired of this wandering mode of life. When I get to this new colony, I will take the first opportunity to let you know how I am getting on, and how I like the country.

Yours, affectionately,

W. B. D.

LETTER IV.

Brazos River, Coahuila and Texas,
July, 16, 1822.

DEAR FRIEND:—After a long and toilsome journey I arrived at this point from Red river, in company with three or four families from that country, on the first day of January, last. We encamped at the crossing of the old San Antonio road, two miles above the mouth of the Little Brazos river. We were several months in getting here, there being several families in company, among whom were quite a number of women and children. A part of the time we were detained by the sickness of one or another of the company, besides this, we lost several horses on the way, and in fact we seemed to meet with a great many misfortunes. We carried our luggage entirely upon pack-horses, the roads being perfectly impassable for a vehicle of any description. I believe I have already given you a description of the country, between Pecan Point and Nacogdoches, in a former letter. From the latter place to the Brazos the country is high and dry; the land is generally poor, though well timbered between Nacogdoches and the Trinity, from there on, we met with large prairies. On arriving at the Brazos we found two families, Garrett and Hibbings, who had got there a few days before us, and were engaged in erecting cabins. We were, all of us, much pleased with the situation of this place, and decided to remain here for the present. The settlement now consisted of seven families; there is no other settlement within fifty miles. About the time of our arrival here, a few families settled below us on this river, near the old La Bahia crossing.

As far as we have seen, we are well pleased with this part of the country. As high up as we have explored, the Brazos has the appearance of being a large navigable stream. The land is very rich and fertile! The timber is good, and in places, particularly on Little river, the white oak and cedar reminds me very forcibly of the timber in Kentucky.

Our mode of living, particularly for the women and children, has been a rough one since our arrival on this river. About that time our bread-stuff gave out, and we had no chance of obtaining more till we could raise it, and we have been obliged to subsist entirely upon the game which we take in the woods and prairies. We have no reason to fear suffering for food, as the country is literally alive with all kinds of game. We have only to go out for a few miles into a swamp between the Big and Little Brazos, to find as many wild cattle as one could wish. If we desire buffalo meat, we are able to go out, load our horses, and return the same day. Bears are very plenty, but we are obliged to use great care when hunting for them, lest the *havalenas* (meaning the peccary) kill our dogs.

The families have saved a few pecks of corn which we planted, but on account of the dry weather and the want of culture, it will yield but a small supply.

The only cows we have, are a few which were brought out by Cherokee John Williams. This of course will prove a good stock country, for the prairies are teeming with wild horses and cattle. There are a vast quantity of bee trees about here, so that we have no want of honey; one might almost give this country the same description as was anciently given of Canaan, "a land flowing with milk and honey," but we are rather short off for the milk just now.

Upon the whole we spent our time very pleasantly; when we get tired of lying about camp, we mend up our moccasins, and start up the Brazos hunting buffalo, more for pastime than anything else. We frequently are gone out two or three weeks; we generally go up as high as we dare go, on account of the Whaco

Indians. You would scarcely believe me, were I to tell you of the vast herds of buffalo which abound here; I have frequently seen a thousand in a day between this place, and the mouth of Little river.

In May, some six or seven of us took a trip as high up as Little river by water. We constructed a small canoe, and about the time we were ready to start, a young gentleman, who had just arrived here from the States, desired to make the trip with us. To this we consented. On our way, we would amuse ourselves by going out and shooting wild cattle, which are in great abundance here. It was dangerous for us to encamp at night, on the east side of the river, on account of the cattle coming in for water, the night being the only time they go to water. We made our station camp at the mouth of Little river on the beach; there we stayed two weeks, killing and drying buffalo meat. We went out every day, killed a buffalo or two apiece, and brought the choice pieces, particularly the tongues, into camp. Our young friend, whom I mentioned as having just come on from the States, had informed me that he was a minister of the gospel. When one kills a buffalo, he generally lays claim to the tongue, as private property, it being a very choice piece; the other portions are shared equally. Our little yankee preacher seemed to enjoy himself very well during the trip, though he was greatly disturbed by our profanity, for we were a rough set. My reason for calling him a yankee, by the by, is on account of the way he managed to get our buffalo tongues. About the time we got our canoe loaded with meat ready to start home, he proposed a plan to break us from swearing, to which we all very readily agreed. The first one who used an oath, was to give whoever first reminded him of it, one of his dried buffalo tongues. Oaths being so common with us, we, of course, did not notice them, and in less than three days, the minister was possessor of all our dried tongues.

Perhaps a description of the wild rye, which grows very plentifully here in the bottoms, might not be uninteresting to you. Indeed, I know if I can give you half an idea of its beauty, you cannot fail to be delighted. The bottom of the Brazos is very wide and level, and in the summer season, rye grows here spontaneously, about four feet high. It would, were it not for the timber standing in the midst, present the same appearance which a cultivated rye field in the States presents, for miles and miles. In fact, it far surpasses the common rye fields in beauty, being much larger and thicker.

I have never witnessed a sight of the kind, which, in my opinion, was more beautiful than this. The color of it is far deeper and richer than any grain I have ever before seen. I always admired the sight of a fine wheat field at home, but when I look at this, I sometimes wonder how I could ever have thought that beautiful; it seems so insignificant when compared with this rye. The timber, in the midst of which it grows, renders the sight the more imposing. There is not in these wild rye bottoms any undergrowth to the timber. The trees are large and tall! The long moss waves from their thick branches, and mixes with the heads of the rye; all seems still, solemn and beautiful, beyond the power of pen to describe. One must see it to get even a faint idea of its beauty.

You, in Kentucky, cannot for a moment conceive of the beauty of one of our prairies in the spring. Imagine for yourself a vast plain extending as far as the eye can reach, with nothing but the deep blue sky to bound the prospect, excepting on the east side where runs a broad red stream, with lofty trees rearing themselves upon its banks, and you have our prairie. This is covered with a carpet of the richest verdure, from the midst of which spring up wild flowers of every hue and shade, rendering the scene one of almost fairy-like beauty. Indeed it is impossible to step without crushing these fairest of nature's works. Upon these natural flower gardens feed numerous herds of buffalo, deer, and other wild animals. Here and there may be seen beautiful clumps of trees, and anon, a little thicket comes in view. The flowers of the prairie are certainly the most beautiful which I have ever beheld. Our ladies in Kentucky would feel themselves amply repaid for all the labor which they bestow upon their beautiful flower gardens, could they but afford one half of the beauty of one of our prairies. Yours, truly,

W. B. D.

LETTER V.

Colorado River, Coahuila and Texas,
March 15, 1823.

Dear Friend:—About six months since in company with two families I came to this river. We struck the river at the crossing of the old La Bahia road. Here were no traces of civilization, nothing to lead us to suppose that the foot of white man had ever trod these plains. Around all was wild, all was silent. Before us flowed the beautiful Colorado, while around us lay the prairies, green and lovely. This is truly an enchanting spot. On the side of the river opposite us, is a high bluff, which at the season of our arrival here, was beautiful beyond description. Here the tall green grass waving in the wind, bent down as if desiring to kiss the water's edge. The water was low, but clear and beautiful. Surrounding this rocky bluff were lofty trees, apparently for miles around. On this side, above us, is a timber country with high bluffs, covered with pine; these reminded me forcibly of the beautiful high cliffs of the Cumberland river, on whose grassy banks I whiled away the merry hours of childhood's days in peace and innocence. As I viewed these cliffs, I could scarcely realize that I was not still the same careless, happy boy, who was wont to roam over the green fields of my own native land, and along the mossy banks of the beautiful Cumberland.

It being late in the evening when we arrived, we immediately encamped. While we were making preparations for roasting a piece of venison, we were surprised by the barking of a dog apparently half a mile above us on the opposite side of the river. Not knowing whether it was the dog of an Indian or a white man, we shouldered our rifles and went up opposite the place from whence the sound proceeded. There we were delighted by the sight of a small log cabin, on the west bank of the river. We shouted in order to learn who was living there. We ascertained them to be two old adventurers by the names of Buckner and Powell. They informed us that there was no way of crossing the river, but that about twelve miles below, on our side of the river, a few families had settled in. The next morning we started from the place of our encampment, to join these families. Our route lay through a beautiful country, the creeks were bounded by tall cedars, the land was hilly, and well covered with timber. On our arrival at the settlement we found five or six families, among whom was my old friend Jesse Burnham, whom I had previously known in Arkansas as well as in Kentucky, also Gillellan and the Kirkendalls; they were engaged in building cabins. I spent some time in looking about the country and hunting.

In a short time after our arrival in this settlement tidings came that a vessel had landed at the mouth of the Colorado. All the crew with the exception of one man had left her, and had come up the river searching for settlements. During their absence the Carancoway Indians attacked the vessel, murdered the guardsman, and plundered the vessel of whatever they wished. We immediately collected all the men we could up the river; these amounted to about twenty-five. We elected Robert Kirkendall, Captain, and took up our line of march for the mouth of the river. This was the second vessel that had landed at the mouth of the Colorado, with emigrants to Coahuila and Texas. Jennings, Hannah, Massey, and Philip Dimmitt had landed there some time previous, had unloaded their vessel; and taken their goods and provisions twenty-five miles up the river, where they had built themselves a cabin and stored away their goods. Jennings was now dead, and the rest of the company had left for the west. On our way down we found three or four families had encamped on the west bank of the river, about forty miles above the bay opposite the head of a large prairie, which extends from there to the bay. There was an old man by the name of Wilson, with two others, Moss and Parks, encamped together. None of them had any white family, Wilson had a few negroes. They appeared to have plenty of pickled pork, coffee, and such things. Of this we thought strange, as they were from Arkansas, and had come by land.

We kept on our course till we arrived at the cabin mentioned above, where Dimmitt and company had stored their goods. The Indians had, judging from appearances, been here a day or two previous, had broken open the cabin, taken everything therefrom, forced open boxes of goods, chests of carpenters' tools, and farming utensils, and after having destroyed their contents, had left them scattered upon the earth. Barrels of whisky had been rolled out of the cabin and left standing there unopened.

After encamping, the Captain immediately placed our sentinels. We began of course to feel a little desirous to know what kind of whisky the barrels contained; we removed the bung from one of them, drew some of the whisky, and each of us took a sip. Soon a gourd was filled and sent round to the sentinels. The sentinels shortly became very brave and courageous, refused to stand guard any longer, and came into camp. The captain being fond of a wee bit of drink himself, had kissed the gourd quite often, and finally decided that we were smart enough to whip all the Indians in that part of the country, that there was no need of sentinels, and we could stay at the guard fire all night. We kept up the frolic till nearly morning; some of the company now and then exclaiming they wished the Indians would attack us, that we might show them how the Americans could fight. The next morning we exerted ourselves to continue our course to the mouth of the river, of course feeling very dull and drowsy.

On arriving at the vessel we found it had been robbed of a large portion of the cargo. We could find nothing of the body of the murdered man, and came to the conclusion that the Indians who were cannibals must have devoured it. We could find nothing of any Indians, and no signs of their having been there for several days. Knowing this tribe to be inhabitants of the coast, we supposed that they had fled into the bay in their canoes, and escaped out of our reach. On our return we discovered a small trail having the appearance of a slide drawn by a horse, going to and from the vessel. Being curious to know the origin of this, we followed it down on to the bay shore, till we came to a little grove, here we found a large part of the plunder secreted. Knowing that this was not done after the manner of the Indians, our suspicions naturally fell upon those men from Arkansas, whom we had discovered with such large supplies of provisions. We now gave up the pursuit of the Indians and started for home. When we arrived at Wilson's camp we interrogated him and his companions about this plunder; being unable to obtain from them any satisfactory answer, we continued our journey home.

Upon our return home some of the men decided to make further investigation of this robbery. They formed a court by electing a magistrate, a sheriff, and other necessary officers. The sheriff was sent down to take the men prisoners. Parks, on being arrested, said if they would not hurt him he would turn evidence, and confess the whole matter; to this the sheriff agreed. Parks' evidence was as follows:

Wilson, Moss, and himself had agreed together to rob the vessel of what they wanted, believing it would be laid to the Indians, as they had already robbed it of part of the cargo. Wilson was to furnish the horse while he, (Parks) and Moss were to do the work. After giving this evidence he was released. The court having been formed with a particular design, or rather from a desire of gain, as it afterwards appeared, Wilson was tried and of course condemned. He was sentenced to be sent to the city of San Antonio de Bexar, and there deposited in a calaboose to await further trial. Moss being some distance below his cabin the sheriff went for him. In a short time the sheriff returned alone, stating that Moss had escaped from his custody. But, by the by, he brought with him a fine gold watch, worth one hundred and fifty dollars, which belonged to Moss. He said that Moss had no convenient way of carrying it, and had given it to him to carry, and then escaped. Moss fled from the country, and has not been heard from since.

Moses Morrison, Nelson and myself were then selected to convey Wilson as a prisoner to Bexar. We consented to do this, believing the members of the court to be acting from the purest of motives. Wilson was immediately put in irons, and we set out for San Antonio. We left the Colorado about twelve miles below the old La Bahia road, and took our course through the woods and prairie, intending to strike the San Antonio road where it crosses the San Markos river. This we succeeded in doing. Our trip to me was a somewhat disagreeable one! This was the first time I had ever traveled with a prisoner, and we were obliged to hunt for our provisions. After striking the road we got on quite well, and in three days entered San Antonio de Bexar. We delivered our prisoner up to the proper authorities and saw him safely lodged in a calaboose.

Being very much pleased with San Antonio, we remained there about a week. This is a very ancient Spanish town, situated in a beautiful plain at the head of the San Antonio river, one hundred and fifty miles from the coast. It contains about five thousand inhabitants. The houses are built mostly of stone, one story in height, with terraced roofs. They are built very compact, and the streets are rather narrow. There are two large magnificent churches in town. There is a standing army of one thousand soldiers constantly stationed there. The soldiers are paid by the government every week, and money is more plentiful there than at any place I was ever at. The population is entirely Mexican, with the exception of three or four French and American merchants. Below the town are missions every three miles for the distance of fifteen miles. These missions contain about three acres of land surrounded by a large stone wall. In the midst of this stands a large splendid Catholic church. At each mission there is generally from one hundred to one hundred and fifty inhabitants.

The land in this country is very rich. There is but little timber, and the water is not to be surpassed in any country. The surface of the earth in this part of the country is generally uneven, and covered with musquit timber resembling in appearance an old apple orchard. The musquit grass grows very thick and about three feet high, and looks very much like a blue grass pasture.

The country between San Antonio and the Colorado is a high, rolling, black and rich country. The Gaudaloupe and San Markos rivers are as beautiful streams as I ever saw in my life, and as finely timbered. The river San Antonio is a beautiful stream, having its head about three miles above the town. It is formed entirely from large cool springs breaking out from a small rocky mountain. The whole country for about twenty miles down is irrigated by this river. The water is conducted from the head of the river on both sides, in ditches through the plantations. In the town it is conducted from the large ditches into smaller ones and carried through every street of the town, so that every garden and every farm can be watered. We were unable to converse with the people of this place, as we did not understand their language; but they treated us with great hospitality.

During my stay in this town a party of about one thousand Camanche Indians came into the town on a treaty expedition. They brought in dried buffalo meat, deer skins and buffalo robes, which they wished to exchange for sugar, beads, &c. These Indians are very friendly with the Mexicans, but friendly as they are, they seem to have the Mexicans rather under their control, making them stand back, if any Americans wished to trade with them.

Soon after our return to the Colorado, we learned that Wilson, whom we had lodged in the calaboose, had made his escape and gone to the United States. After having rested a few days, we went to the officers of the court, by whom we had been employed in expectation of receiving some remuneration for our services; but to our sad disappointment we found that the property of Wilson had been divided among the officers during our absence, and there was nothing left us, after the other expenses had been paid.

The country through which the Colorado runs from here to the mouth, is a very beautiful prairie country. I have only explored the western bank. It is one entire prairie from here to the bay, with the exception of a few small creeks. The prairie frequently bluffs up to the river, and between those bluffs are rich bottoms of timber, though not extensive. The prairie is very rich and beautiful. The river empties into the beautiful bay of Matagorda about forty-five miles from the Passo Cavallo. On the whole, I believe I like this part of the country as well as any I have ever seen, and think probably I may remain here for some time.

Yours, affectionately,

W. B. D.

LETTER VI.

Colorado River, Coahuila and Texas,
August 29, 1823.

DEAR FRIEND:—Since I last wrote you, I have been engaged in exploring the country, and hunting; for, you must know, we are still dependent upon our guns for a support. We are frequently meeting with adventures, as of course we ought to expect to, in a new country inhabited by Indians and wild beasts. We have had *one* severe engagement with the Carancoway Indians. Three of our young men had been down the river in a canoe, to obtain corn. This had been raised there; the manner in which the ground was prepared, was this: they burned off the cane brake, and made holes in the ground with a hand-spike, where they planted the corn.

The land being very rich, a large crop was raised in this manner. The Carancoway Indians had come up the country and encamped at the mouth of Skull creek, about fifteen miles below our settlement. They saw the young men as they returned with their canoe load of corn, and lay in ambush for them; when they were sufficiently near, they fired upon them and killed two, a Mr. Loy and Mr. Ally. Mr. Clark, the only one now remaining, leaped into the river and endeavored to save himself by swimming. Before the time he reached the opposite shore, he received seven severe wounds from their arrows. He succeeded in escaping from them by crawling into a very heavy cane brake. Here he lay all night, being unable to crawl from the loss of blood.

A young man by the name of Brotherton, had left the settlement that same evening, to go down the river to the mouth of Skull creek on horseback. Not apprehending any danger from the Indians, he rode up to the creek quite late in the evening, where he was surrounded by the savages. Thinking them to be the friendly Indians who lived in the neighborhood, he still feared not. He had dismounted from his horse, when an Indian stepped up to him and took hold of his gun, as though he wished to look at it. Just then he discovered them to be of a tribe with whom he was unacquainted. He endeavored to retain possession of his gun, but the Indian succeeded in wresting it from him. The Indian attempted to shoot him, but the gun being double-triggered, he was unable to fire. He threw down the gun, and catching up his bow, shot Brotherton in the back, as he was running from them. The arrow entered his back-bone, doing no material injury. He made his escape into the timber, and in a few hours succeeded in reaching the settlement. We immediately raised a force of fourteen men, among whom was a raw Englishman, and at midnight we arrived at the place where Brotherton had been wounded. We there dismounted, and five of us went to search out the encampment of the Indians. After finding out the situation of their encampment, we returned to our comrades. Here we remained till about half an hour before day. We tied our horses, which we left in charge of the Englishman, and proceeded to the Indians' encampment. As silently as possible, we crawled into a thicket about ten steps behind the camps, placing ourselves about four or five steps apart, in a sort of half-circle, and completely cutting off their retreat from the swamp. The light of day was not yet sufficiently strong to enable us to see the sights of our guns. We remained perfectly silent! The Indians were up and busily engaged, apparently in preparing breakfast. When the light was sufficient for us to see clear, we could not see anything of the Indians. We now commenced talking, in order to draw them from their wigwams; in this we succeeded. They rushed out as if greatly alarmed! We fired upon them and killed nine upon the spot. The rest attempted to escape, but having no way to run, except into the open prairie, we rushed upon them, and killed all but two, who had made their escape, though wounded, after the first fire. The number killed, nineteen. It may seem strange that we should be so successful in killing so many Indians, without any of us getting wounded. We can only account for it, from the fact of the Indians being so greatly alarmed, that they did not even attempt to fire upon us.

After the fatigues of the night and the toils of the morning, we being quite hungry, entered the wigwams, where we found plenty of provisions. Of these we made a hearty breakfast; we then loaded our horses with such things as we found in their wigwams, and returned to the settlement.

It was at this battle, and the only time in my life, that I undertook to scalp an Indian. These Indians had remarkably long beautiful plaits of hair. I recollect hearing my father tell of the manner in which the Indians used to treat their victims in the first settlement of the United States, and of their taking the scalps from men, women, and children. Moved somewhat by a spirit of retaliation, I concluded I would take the scalp of an Indian home, as a trophy from battle; but the skin of his head was so thick, and the sight so ghastly, that the very thoughts of it almost makes the blood curdle in my veins.

This tribe of Indians inhabits the coast; dwelling between the Brazos Santiago and the mouth of the Brazos. They are an exceedingly fierce and warlike tribe, and also perfect cannibals. They might, with very great propriety, be termed a race of giants; their general height is over six feet, and they are very stoutly built. Their weapons are bows and arrows; each man carries a bow of precisely his own length, and so very strong that scarcely any American can bend it. They can shoot with their bows and arrows one hundred yards with as great accuracy as an American can with his rifle, and with an equally deadly aim.

To give you a clearer idea of the great power with which they use their weapons, I will tell you an anecdote illustrating it. Soon after this encounter which I have been writing of, a large party of these Indians came up above the head of Bay Prairie, crossed over, and did some mischief, such as killing stock, &c.

Signs of their being in the neighborhood were discovered by a couple of men, Jackson and Clark. They immediately crossed the river to learn if the Indians were still there. As soon as the Indians discovered them, they fired upon them. An arrow entered the arm of Jackson, just above the elbow, breaking the bone. Clark drew his gun and shot the Indian down. They made their escape, and instantly sent word to the settlement that the Indians were in the neighborhood. As we are always ready at a minute's warning, we soon mustered a force of fifteen or twenty men, and went down. Clark accompanied us to show us where the Indians were encamped. In crossing the river we were obliged to go down the bank on to a sand beach, then up the beach under a bluff about two hundred yards, to the upper end of the beach, to arrive at the ford. On this beach we rode at full speed, lest the Indians should see us and escape. After crossing the river we found nothing but the body of the Indian, whom Clark had killed, swollen and bloated to a frightful size, and fresh vestiges of the Indians having been there. The Indians had scattered and secreted themselves in a swamp. Finding it of no use to follow them, we instantly returned.

On recrossing the river, we saw sticking in the bluff bank of the river, about two feet above our heads, as we sat upon our horses, seventy-five or a hundred arrows, which the Indians had shot at us as we rode up the beach. From the point where the Indians were to the bluff, was from one hundred and fifty to two hundred yards.

I have just had the pleasure of spending a few days in the company of Stephen F. Austin. This is the first time I have seen him since his return from the city of Mexico. He was on this river with a surveyor, having lots laid off from a tract of land that he had just located for the purpose of building a town, about eight miles above the crossing of the old Atoskoscita road. But he has since abandoned it, and located his town, which he calls San Felipe de Austin, on the Brasos river.

There seems to be at present quite a tide of emigration to this country. I presume a great many more emigrants will be on this fall, as Austin has just returned from Mexico, and it will probably soon be known that he has received a commission from the Mexican government to settle a colony here. The Mexican government offers strong inducements to people to come out and settle, by granting large tracts of land. And, indeed, the lands in this country are so rich and beautiful, and the climate so healthy and delightful, as to be of itself an inducement sufficiently strong to attract many roving adventurers to this beautiful paradise of America.

Sincerely yours, W. B. D.

LETTER VII.

Colorado River, Coahuila and Texas,
December 1, 1823.

DEAR FRIEND:—Since I last wrote, our sufferings here have been very great, for want of provisions. On account of the dry weather our crops were very poor, and are now entirely spent; the game has left this section of country, and we are very much pressed for food. There have a great many new settlers come on this fall, and those who have not been accustomed to hunting in the woods for a support, are obliged to suffer. Were it not for a few of us boys who have no families, their wives and children would suffer much more than they now do; in fact I fear some of them would starve.

Those of us who have no families of our own, reside with some of the families in the settlement. We remain here notwithstanding the scarcity of provisions, to assist in protecting the settlement. We are obliged to go out in the morning a party of us to hunt food, leaving a part of the men at home to guard the settlement from the Indians, who are very hostile to us. Indeed, we dare not go out to hunt except in companies, as we are obliged to keep on the lookout, lest the savages fall upon us, and one cannot watch for them and hunt too. Game is now so scarce that we often hunt all day for a deer or a turkey, and return at night empty-handed.

It would make your heart sick, to see the poor little half naked children, who have eaten nothing during the day, watch for the return of the hunters at night. As soon as they catch the first glimpse of them, they eagerly run to meet them, and learn if they have been successful in their hunt. If the hunters return with a deer or a turkey, the children are almost wild with delight, while on the other hand, they suddenly stop in their course, their countenances fall, the deep bitter tears well up in their eyes and roll down their pale cheeks. 'Tis truly heart rending to us to return home after a hard day's hunt, without any game, knowing as we do, that the women and children are entirely without food, and can have nothing till we have found it in our hunt. No one can know our sufferings, or even imagine our feelings, unless they themselves have been in similar situations. And to render our situation the more dreadful, our sufferings the more acute, we are often obliged to get the women and children of the different settlements together, and make a sort of fort to protect them from the merciless savages. It is surprising to see how bravely the delicate females bear up under their sufferings without a murmur or a single complaint. 'Tis only by their looks that they show their feelings. When we seem in the least discouraged, they cheer us with kind words and looks, and strive to appear cheerful and happy. They do more, when we are wearied out with toil and fatigue, they take our guns in their hands and assist us in standing guard. Our prospects for this winter look very gloomy; if the Indians should attack us, I scarcely know what we shall do; but I hope for the best, and trust we shall be provided for in some way.

More than all this, were it not for the Toncoway Indians, a small tribe who are friendly to us and supply us with dressed deer skins, we should be almost entirely destitute of clothing. Once in a great while we are able to obtain a small piece of unbleached domestic, or a bit of calico, at the exorbitant price of seventy-five cents a yard, from some one passing through the country; but this is very seldom. The common dress of the men and children is made of buckskin, and even the women are often forced to wear the same.

A few days ago, I went over on to the Brazos, to San Felipe de Austin, more for the purpose of seeing how Austin was succeeding in building his town, than any thing else. While there, one night just after supper, Austin came to me and told me that a traveler had come in town, and brought information that a large party of Indians were marching down in the direction of our settlement, on the Colorado. He advised me to ride with all possible speed home, and give the alarm, that the settlers might be prepared for an attack.

I immediately caught my horse, though I felt very little like riding, having been frolicking for two or three days, (for I have become very wild for a boy brought up as I was, by a Baptist minister,) and started for home. After traveling eight or nine miles, I fell asleep! My horse took a different course from the one I generally traveled, and struck the San Bernard at a place I had never crossed. I was awaked by his stopping to drink. Before me lay a beautiful white sand beach, which, as the full light of the moon fell upon it, was lovely beyond description. For a moment, I was so completely enchanted as to entirely forget myself. But I immediately bethought myself of my errand, and knowing the river to be the San Bernard, put spurs to my horse and hastened on. I soon arrived at Straw Snyder's, on the east side of the river, and gave the alarm; I then crossed the river, and rode with haste to the settlement. Before day we had the women and children collected together, and were prepared for an attack. As soon as it was light, four or five of us started up the river to see if we could learn anything of the Indians. On arriving at the house of old Mr. Thos. Williams, who lived on Williams' creek, west of the Colorado, and about ten miles below the old La Bahia road, we saw a large company of Indians coming towards the cabin. They marched up, though not in a hostile manner. We soon ascertained them to be Whacos and Towaconies. They numbered one hundred and eighty, all armed and equipped in a warlike manner. There were in the company two squaws, wives of two of the chiefs. The Indians told us they had not come to disturb the white settlers, but were in pursuit of the Toncoways. They seemed to wish us to show them where this tribe was; but we informed them we did not know where they were. They then informed us that they would remain where they then were, till they found the Toncoways, and that they wanted meat. Williams immediately drove up what few milch cows he had, as he did not wish to irritate them, since there were but nine white men in the settlement. He then went out to kill one, but they told him to stop for them to select one. They chose one that suited them, and made him kill it. We afterwards ascertained that they had been in the settlement at Rabb's the day previous, where they had conducted in the same manner. We were obliged to submit to their wishes at this time, our number being so small, but this was a very hard thing for us to do. They encamped about one hundred and fifty yards from Williams' cabin, where they said they should remain till they found the Toncoways; they then sent out two spies in a westerly direction to find the Toncoway camps. As we wished to keep on friendly terms with them, we told them we would send for our big Captain, who would form a treaty with them. We sent round the settlement and got together what few men there were in the settlement, which increased our company to nine. Among these was Col. James J. Ross. He being a large fine looking man, and somewhat acquainted with Indian custom, we told was our big Captain. They then agreed to enter into a treaty with us. Williams' wife and daughters having gone to one of the neighbor's cabins a mile distant, we occupied his cabin as council room. Having no confidence in the treaty, we now tried to think of some manner in which we could destroy the Indians, lest on their leaving they should attempt to commit depredations. We first thought we would make a large dinner party in a sort of fort which Williams had built round his house, to which we would invite them; and when they were all engaged in feasting, we would fall upon them and destroy as many as we could. But on further reflection we decided that the difference in our numbers was so great, that we could kill but a small portion of them, and the women and children would be exposed to their fury; we therefore abandoned this project.

At night they built a large fire, about fifty yards from their place of encampment, where they held a war dance. This lasted all night. The temptation to cut off their retreat to their wigwams, where they had left their arms, and then fire upon them, was almost too strong to be resisted. But knowing that we should at last be obliged to retreat, on account of their number, and that the women and children would then be unprotected, we gave up this also.

We now abandoned all idea of making an attack upon the Indians, but to act entirely upon the defensive; this we did for three days and nights. On the morning of the fourth day, the spies returned. Having to cross a large prairie, which lays on the west side of the Colorado, they were seen, when two miles distant. When they were discovered, the whole army commenced singing a war song, which they continued until the spies were within two hundred yards. They then seated themselves in a large circle, upon the ground. The spies, on dismounting from their horses, walked into the midst of the circle and seated themselves, before a word was said by either party. One of the spies then commenced talking. His speech lasted about fifteen minutes. We supposed him to be telling what he had seen in his absence. After this, they all arose, and commenced making preparations to leave. We inquired of them, what they were going to do. They informed us, that their spies had made no discoveries of the Toncoways, and they were going to leave. This they did, without giving us any further disturbance.

We then, all of us, returned to our respective homes, feeling very thankful, that the Indians had gone, without committing any depredations, though mortified, that we had been unable to destroy them.

Your affectionate friend,
W. B. D.

LETTER VIII.

Colorado River, Coahuila and Texas,
November 5, 1824.

DEAR FRIEND:—I can only excuse myself for not writing you some time ago, by informing you that the Land Office has opened, for the purpose of giving grants to the three hundred settlers of Austin's colony. What time I have not been occupied in Indian warfare, or hunting, to obtain the means of subsistence, I have been engaged in looking out, and locating lands.

You inquired of me, how much land is granted to each man. To every married man, is granted one league and labor of land, which contains four thousand six hundred and twenty-one acres; and each single man is allowed one quarter of a league, which contains eleven hundred and eleven acres. The difference between the Mexican and American measurement is this: in the Mexican measurement one-eighth per cent. is taken off from the American chains. Fortunately for us young men, who are here at this time, Austin, fearing that there would not be found three hundred families in the colony, within the given time for his fulfilling his contract, lest he should lose his grant, informed us, that if we would locate ourselves together as families, each family consisting of two members, calling one the head, he would grant to each family a league and labor of land. But I must not forget to mention, that every single man, who receives land under the Mexican government, on marrying, is entitled to an augmentation of his claim, to a league and labor of land.

While we were busy locating our lands, tidings came, that our settlement was likely to be invaded by the Carancoway Indians. Each one of us immediately left our work unfinished, and armed ourselves in hot haste, to protect the defenceless women and children.

An old gentleman, by the name of White, called Blanco, by the Mexicans, who resided at La Bahia, on the San Antonio river, some sixty miles from the coast, hearing that corn had been raised among the cane brakes on the Colorado, in company with two Mexicans, had coasted round in a yawl, to the mouth of the Colorado. There they were taken prisoners by the Carancoway Indians, who had encamped there. These Indians, being friendly with the Mexicans, held a war council, and determined to set the Mexicans at liberty, and put White to death. On learning this, the Mexicans remonstrated with them, telling them White was their friend, and lived on the Mexican land; but they replied, White was an American, and they should kill every American they could find. White now told them that there was corn for sale on the Colorado, and if they would let him go up there, he would get corn, and come back and trade. He also told them, that on his return, as he should not know where they would be encamped, he would set the prairie on fire, two miles above the mouth of the river, where his boat lay, and they could come there and trade with him. They, thinking they could kill him as he returned, consented to this. He then left the Indian encampment, and proceeded alone to the American settlements, where he gave information of the manner in which he had been treated by the Indians. We immediately collected about thirty men, elected Captain Burnham, commander, and marched down to the mouth of the river. On arriving at the place where White had left the Mexicans with the boat, the Mexicans informed us, that the Indians had either encamped at the mouth of the river, or on the peninsula, across the bay. Our Captain not knowing whether they would come to this place to trade, by land or water, ordered the men to separate into two companies, and fifteen of us to march down the river about a mile, and secrete ourselves, while fifteen remained where we then were, and set the prairie on fire.

Those of us, who were stationed below the others, had secreted ourselves in the bushes, about two steps apart, when we saw a large canoe filled with Indians, about a half mile below us, coming up the river. We were ordered to keep ourselves perfectly quiet, until they had come up abreast of us, and we received orders to fire. We sat for a few moments, till the canoe had arrived opposite our midst, when we received orders to fire. We fired, and succeeded in killing all but one, who jumped overboard. We, however, were so fortunate as to kill him, on firing a second time.

We now got into the canoe, and went up to the place where we had left our companions. We then divided into three companies, leaving ten men at the encampment, while ten men got into the yawl, and ten into the canoe, intending to go down the river into the bay, and cross over on to the peninsula. When we got out about ten miles from land, a violent storm arose. The huge billows rolled in mountain waves, and filled our little boats with water. Wave, succeeded wave! There were but two or three hands on board, who understood managing boats; leaving these to guide the vessel, we all set to work, some with their hats, some with their shoes, and indeed with every thing we could find, to bale the boats out. But ere this could be accomplished, another wave, seemingly larger than the former, would break above our heads, and threaten to sink us in the briny deep. Anon, we were lifted high upon rolling waves, and again we sank beneath the huge billows, which every moment threatened to engulf us. Our anxiety was painful, beyond description; never till that moment, did I know fear. Finding we should be unable to reach the peninsula that night, we turned our course homeward. The destruction of our boats seemed inevitable. We at last, worn out with toil and fatigue, succeeded in reaching land. We then destroyed the canoe of the Indians and White, and the Mexicans started in the yawl for La Bahia. Having nothing further to detain us, we immediately set out for home.

We decided, as we had never explored the eastern side of the river, to cross over, and pass up on that side. Here we found a large and beautiful prairie, extending from the mouth of the river, up, for the distance of forty miles. This prairie is fifteen miles in width, for the most part level, and the land is very rich and fertile. On the east side of this prairie, is Caney creek. The soil on the banks of this creek, is the richest and most productive in the world. At the head of the prairie, the bottoms become more extensive, being from five to seven miles in width: it extends from the river, out to Peach creek, then is a beautiful prairie, which reaches from the creek to the Brazos river. The timber in the Colorado bottom, from the head of the prairie, up to our settlement, is very rich and luxuriant. The cane brakes are very thick and heavy. Beautiful yrpon thickets, may be seen here and there, which enchain the eye, by their surpassing loveliness. The yrpon (this is a Mexican word, and I spell it according to the pronunciation,) is an evergreen shrub, which, in the winter season, is covered with beautiful red berries. The leaves of this shrub are used by the Indians, and frequently by the whites, to make tea. It has a very agreeable flavor. These thickets are very common in this country.

A short time after our return home, there came into our settlement, a Mexican, wounded and bleeding. He stated that he was traveling in the employ of a gentleman, by the name of Corasco, who was driving a large cavyyard of horses and mules to Louisiana; and that they had been attacked by robbers, at a creek, about twelve miles from this place, and Corasco and all his company had been murdered, he alone escaping, though badly wounded. The man was literally covered with wounds. We instantly raised a party of six or seven men, and went to the creek, where we found the dead bodies of Corasco and his companions; the cavyyard was gone. There was a deep ravine on the bank of the creek, which had been washed out by the rain. There we placed the bodies, and covered them as well as we were able. This mournful task done, we set out on the trail which the cavyyard had made, which we followed, to where it had crossed the Colorado, half way between the La Bahia and Atoskascita roads. We still kept on the trail, which seemed to be making its way direct to Louisiana. We overtook them just as they were about swimming the Brazos; we fired upon the men, killing all but three, who sprang into the river and swam to the opposite shore. Two of them were killed while swimming the river; the other succeeded in making his escape. Previous to this we had been greatly troubled by robbers taking our property; and we have frequently followed after them, brought them back, tied them up and whipped them. But as this only exasperated them, instead of remedying the evil, we were advised by Austin to take less trouble upon ourselves. He said as we had no courts of justice, we had better follow the thieves and get our property back, but never bring any of the thieves back with us. Upon this hint, we now acted. We cut off the head of one of these men, and sticking it upon a pole by the way-side, left it there as a warning to all others who might see it.

About this time, the Carancoway Indians again came into the settlements, and falling upon the people who resided on the Brazos and San Bernard rivers, killed several. The engagement now became severe. A great portion of the Indians were killed, and several whites. The Indians, after losing the greater part of their men, returned home. They now sent Austin word, that they wished to form a treaty with the Americans. Upon this, Austin called for one hundred volunteers, which were immediately raised, and we started for La Bahia, where the Carancoways proposed meeting us. We met at a small creek, three miles this side of La Bahia, and were three days forming a treaty, and prescribing them certain limits, which they were never to pass; and in which, they were never to be disturbed. Since then, all has been quiet and peaceful in the settlements. Yours, sincerely,

W. B. D.

LETTER IX.

San Antonio de Bexar,
March 18, 1826.

Dear Friend :—Soon after I last wrote you, all being still and quiet at home, and the land titles all settled, I decided to travel awhile in Mexico, in order to learn the Spanish language, and become acquainted with the manners and customs of the Mexican people. I left home on a trading expedition, not with the expectation of making a great deal, but still wishing to make sufficient to defray my own expenses. I was very agreeably disappointed on arriving in this country, by finding the Mexicans a very agreeable, hospitable people. Indeed, I have never in my life met with more hospitality than since I have been in Mexico. I find them to be a people fond of dress and gayety. Their whole study seems to be for enjoyment. Mirth and amusement occupy their whole time. If one is fond of balls and theatres, he can here have an opportunity of attending the one every evening. Almost every species of dissipation is indulged in, except drinking. This is looked upon with abhorrence, especially by the men, the women being much more fond of drinking than the men.

Perhaps there is no country in the world where there is so great a distinction between the classes as here in Mexico. There are three classes, the aristocracy, the middle classes, and the Peons. The first class are well educated, and keep themselves entirely aloof from the other classes. The middle classes are poor, and work for themselves, and are far superior to the Peons. The Peons, or lower class, are a sort of slaves, who are employed by the aristocracry. All classes seem to look upon the European, or the American, who conducts himself with propriety, as a being of superior order to themselves.

To give you an illustration of their hospitality, I will tell you an anecdote: Two young gentlemen from Mississippi, and myself, crossed the Rio Grande, to a small but beautiful village. There being no taverns in this country, travelers are obliged to put up at a private house, or rent a house and hire a cook. We chose the latter, it being not only cheaper but more pleasant. On the evening of our arrival, about three o'clock, a couple of very gentlemanly looking officers rode up to our door, and presented us with a ticket of invitation to a party. Near dark three or four officers called to escort us to the house where the party was given. On our arriving at the house, we were ushered into a large ball room, where a large company of ladies were seated; after being introduced to these, we were shown into an adjoining room, where was a large table loaded with choice wines, rich fruits, and every dainty that could be procured. We were told whenever we felt like taking any refreshments, not to wait for any further invitation, but walk in and help ourselves. In dancing, before the opening of any new figure, some one of the officers would ask us if we wished to dance! If we replied in the affirmative, we were introduced to some one of the ladies who, on being invited, never refused to dance.

A stranger in Mexico can always find a mother and a friend among the Mexican ladies. If he is in want they are ever ready to assist him; should he be cast into prison, he need not fear suffering for want of food, provided the ladies are permitted to take him anything.

The people of Mexico all profess the Roman Catholic religion; all classes, men, women, and children engage in gambling. Of a Sabbath morning, every person attends church. In this, they are very particular, the service closes at ten o'clock. Immediately afterwards, priests and people repair to gambling rooms, where they spend their time in playing and betting large sums of money till night closes in. They then go to a party or a fandango, according to their rank and station in society. The higher classes never attend fandangoes, except as spectators, and the lower classes are never admitted to parties except as waiters. The Mexicans are generally considered a treacherous people, but this is only true of them when they find they can make a large sum of money by treachery. The officers can be bribed; but in friendship they are warm and firm.

As I have spent most of my time on the frontier, where standing armies are stationed, I have become acquainted with their system of warfare. They are not expert in war, and some nations, on this account, think them a cowardly people; but I think it owing more to their formality, than cowardice. Indeed, I would say they were rather brave, than cowardly. But their movements are so slow, that they never succeed well in war, particularly with the Indians. For instance, if Indians enter a town committing depredations, the first notice given, is the firing an alarm gun at the barracks, then the drums beat to muster the troops, who parade a while, and after receiving orders to be prepared on such a day, at such an hour, to follow the enemy, are dismissed. At the appointed time, which is, perhaps, the second day after the depredations have been committed, they will start to follow the enemy. But by this time, the foe will be so much in advance of them, that after an absence of three or four days, they return to their stations; of course, having been unsuccessful. Every advantage which they obtain over an enemy, is done more by intrigue than by active exertion; and not being able to deal with the wily savage in this manner, they are generally unsuccessful in their wars with them. These people are very unskillful in the use of guns.

At one time, a friend of mine, John R. Foster, and myself, were wishing to travel into the interior of Mexico. About the same time, a large convoy of soldiers were leaving San Antonio for the same place. It being very dangerous to travel without escort, on account of Indians and robbers, we laid our plans to travel with the convoy. On the first evening, we encamped about an hour before sun-down, and my friend and myself strayed away from the camp for a short time, and while absent, succeeded in killing a couple of very fine turkeys. On returning to camp, having but little use for the turkeys, we sent one, as it so chanced, to the General. He immediately sent for us to his camp, in order to learn in what manner we had killed the turkeys. We informed him, that we had driven them to take refuge in a tree, where we had shot them with our rifles. He desired us to bring our rifles to him, that he might see them. This we did. He then wished to see us shoot something, that he might see in what manner we used them. We shot at a target which was placed at the distance of a hundred yards; at this he manifested a good deal of surprise, as he also did at our taking sight. The Mexican manner of shooting, being entirely without taking aim; they as frequently fire backwards with the gun upon their shoulders, while running from an enemy, as any way. After this, we were every day, during the trip, invited to dine with the General, who was well provided with all kinds of dainties, and after dinner, we were invariably desired to spend some time shooting at a paper mark, which he retained if we hit it, which we seldom failed in doing, and exhibited on our arrival in Mexico, as specimens of the Americans' great ability in shooting. Frequently on the trip, he would desire the Mexicans to try their skill with us. They use a scoppet, a sort of shot gun, and were seldom able to hit the target; at last they absolutely refused to shoot with us at all. They are, however, very skillful in the use of the sword and lance; in this, they are thoroughly drilled. They are also, without doubt, the most excellent equestrians in the world, being able, while running a horse at full speed, to stoop down, and pick a small pocket knife from the ground.

The country here is very beautiful, and I would be happy to give you a description of it, but as I am soon going further into the interior, I will defer that till I write again, when I shall be able to speak more fully upon it.

Perhaps you may be interested in a description of our mode of traveling in this new country, where all is wild and unsettled, and particularly, in camping out. We are frequently out for several days together, without seeing the face of any human being, save those who are in our own company, and without seeing any vestige of man's habitation. Of course, then, we are obliged to provide ourselves with camp equipage, and prepare ourselves for a temporary residence in the woods and mountains, far from any settlements, and for aught we know, in places where the foot of white man has never before trod. In this there is something pleasant, but, as in this life, the bitter is ever mingled with the sweet, so there is ofttimes something disagreeable. Imagine for yourself a company of men, traveling from place to place on mules and pack horses. Our route lays through a country uninhabited, where lurks the wily savage, where roams the beasts of the forest, and bandits are ever ready to spring upon the unwary and unsuspecting. Dark night comes on, and flings her sober veil o'er hill, woodland and prairie. We know that the fierce savage moved by implacable hatred, without doubt, follows in our wake, in order that he may destroy us as we sleep. We move on, under cover of night, for an hour or two, that the Indians may not be able to see us, and then strike off from the road and go about a mile. Here, then, we prepare to spend the night. We look around for fuel, build us a fire, and cook our suppers. Our appetites are sharpened by the exercise of riding, and we partake of our homely repast with a relish, which a king might enjoy. This done, we look us out a spot free from snakes, which we entirely surround with a caboras or hair rope, which we always carry with us, and over which a snake will never pass, and spreading our blankets in the midst, lay ourselves down to sleep, with the blue heavens above us, and the green earth beneath. We choose, if possible, to encamp on the bank of some stream, where we can have the benefit of fresh water; but if this cannot be, we always carry with us a Spanish gourd filled with water. Sometimes, however, we suffer exceedingly for want of something to drink, on account of the rivers and creeks being dry. But this of course we must expect in a southern country, where we have but little rain in the summer season, and the burning sun pours down his powerful rays, and dries the earth and streams. This is one of the miseries of traveling, in this country. Then, again, in cold and stormy weather, 'tis exceedingly unpleasant to be without a roof to shelter us, and no bed at night to receive our weary limbs. But on the whole, I think the sweets more than counterbalance the bitter; and the truly romantic life of a traveler in a wild unsettled country, has more charms for me, than the life which my fashionable friends at home lead in their drawing-rooms and parlors, surrounded as they are, with every luxury which the heart of man can desire.

I like the Spanish language very much. I think it a very musical and harmonious language, far more so, than the English. I succeed well in learning it, and expect soon to be able to speak it fluently. In fact, a person situated as I am, can hardly help learning it fast. I sometimes pass months, without hearing a word of English spoken.

I have not heard any tidings from Austin's colony, since I left it, and from that fact, am inclined to think that all is quiet and peaceful there. At the time I left, all was prosperous and happy, and many emigrants were fast coming in.

Yours, truly,

W. B. D.

LETTER X.

Saltillo, Mexico, January 6, 1827.

DEAR FRIEND:—I promised in my last to give you a description of this country, as soon as I had explored it sufficiently. I have since then been traveling a great deal among the mountains of Mexico in the interior, and also upon the coast. I am truly delighted with the country. I thought Texas a very beautiful land, almost a paradise, but Mexico, if possible, surpasses Texas. The country from Bexar to the mountains is high, dry, and nearly level, with rich, black, stiff soil, which, when the weather is dry, cracks open, so as to prove dangerous to an equestrian; the cracks are often so broad and deep as to be perfectly impassable, and if a horse chances to put his foot in one, he may sink in up to his shoulder; this is no less true of Texas. But to return; in this country there is but little timber; the country is mostly a prairie country, the prairies being mostly covered with shrubs, musquit trees, and prickly pear. By the way, I must tell you something about the prickly pear, lest you should think it the same as the ladies at the north so often cultivate; and indeed the difference is not great, except in the size of the two. Here the prickly pear grows from one to fifteen feet in height, and frequently with a round body like a tree, eighteen inches in diameter, and the leaves measuring a foot in breadth. The flowers are red, yellow, and white; these are exceedingly beautiful and large. The fruit is sometimes blue, and sometimes red, and of a very pleasant flavor. Upon the leaf of the prickly pear grows a small red insect, called cochineal. When this cochineal is dried, it bears a strong resemblance to a little bug, and is very valuable for dyeing.

The road is ofttimes completely hedged in for miles by long rows of prickly pear, which are almost impassable. Beneath the huge leaves of the pear are vast quantities of snakes and poisonous reptiles, which have crawled under them to shelter themselves from the scorching rays of the sun. Almost every species of cactus may be found growing wild in the Mexican prairie, as far superior to those cultivated in the north, in size and beauty, as is the prickly pear of which I have endeavored to give you a faint idea. When these various cactuses are in full bloom with all their rich and varied hues, they render the prairies beautiful beyond the power of language to describe.

All the shrubbery throughout this country is covered with thorns. I have frequently stopped at noon and thrown my blanket over a shrub, to protect me from the sun, and on rising to go, you would be greatly amused, could you see what difficulty I have in getting my blanket. It seems to cling to the bush with a tenacity impossible to overcome; as soon as I get one part free, it clings on in another; now my coat is caught among the thorns, and I must leave my blanket to free my coat; by this time the thorns get as firm a hold upon my blanket as they had at first, and the work is all to go over again. At last, after a good deal of hard fighting with this unconscious foe, I succeed in getting back what is my own, and ride on thankful to get off as well as I did.

In this country, about Saltillo, and among the mountains, the land is rich, fertile, and beautiful; the valleys are from ten to thirty miles in extent, covered with a carpet of perpetual verdure. Down in these valleys, one may stand, feeling the genial influence of a warm sunny May morning, and on looking around, and above, see the deep snow piled in huge white drifts upon the mountains, looking cold and dreary. The comfortable sensation produced by this sight, can be better imagined than described; you know yourself how comfortable it is in cold December at home, when the bleak north wind blows chill, and all without is drear, to be seated in a warm room, surrounded with geraniums, and other beautiful house plants. But, to stand in the open air in a calm and sunny day, beholding the fair creations of Dame Nature's hand growing spontaneously, and the light breezes wafting to us their delicious perfume, and view this cold and desolate scene, is infinitely more delightful. In fact, in a half day's ride, one can enjoy every variety of climate, from the hot midsummer day of the tropics, to the cold December weather of our northern clime.

To me, there is nothing more agreeable than to wake in the morning, when among the mountains, and listen to the bleating of the calves and lambs, the lowing of the cows, the braying of the mules and donkies, and to behold the bakharas herding the cattle, the horses and mules, while on every cliff and rock, sheep and goats may be seen sporting from rock to rock, and leaping over every dangerous cliff. In this country, one may be awakened every morning by music. If he is in the town he will hear the rich sound of the flute and French horn; and among the mountains, he will hear the music of the herds of which I have just been speaking, and which is to my ear the most delightful music I ever heard.

The exports of this country are wool, cochineal, and fruits; besides this a vast number of mules are driven into the States for sale. The country produces wheat, corn, rye, oats, barley, potatos, onions, and all kinds of garden vegetables, sufficient for home consumption. Almost every kind of fruit grows here plentifully. Oranges, lemons, bananas, peaches, pears, plums, apples, figs, cocoanuts, chocolate beans, granathas, and plantains are to be found here in great quantities. Here too are the richest of grapes, from which is made the purest kind of wine.

This country is settled differently, from any place I was ever in. The people all reside in large towns, which are situated from twenty to forty miles apart. The country between these towns, is not settled by farmers, as in America. A few wealthy rancheros dwell in the country, who own vast herds of stock, of all kinds. These, usually, are surrounded by ten or fifteen families of poor people, who reside near them, together with peons and bakharas, or herdsmen. These rancheros raise large crops of corn, wheat, and indeed, almost every production of this country. Their ranchos are kept under good cultivation, and the ground being very rich, produces abundantly. As but little rain falls during the dry season, great pains are taken to irrigate the lands. Artificial streams are formed, which run through the ranchos, and at a certain time in the day, the flood gates are opened, and the water spreads over the land.

In every town, is built one or more magnificent churches. These are all Roman Catholic buildings. There are, in these churches, a vast amount of golden ornaments and splendid decorations, which are very grand and beautiful. Every thing within, is solemn and sublime. The lofty roof, the long aisles, the golden images, and the wall hung with pictures of master painters, fill the spectator with awe and wonder. You may, perhaps, have entertained the idea, that there is no solemnity in the Roman Catholic form of worship, since they are such a dissipated class of people; but if so, let me beg of you to dismiss the opinion. I never, in my life, witnessed a ceremony more truly solemn and imposing, than that performed by the Roman Catholics. Of a Sabbath morning, from five hundred to a thousand persons, may be seen entering one of the churches. As they enter the door of the church, each one dips his finger in a silver basin of holy water, and crosses himself. He then advances with slow and measured tread, to his place in the church, and there kneels. In this posture he continues during the time of service which is performed in the Latin language. The priest stands within an elevated altar, which is decorated with gold, and costly ornaments. Upon the altar, stand twelve golden candlesticks, in each of which is burning a waxen candle. There too, are golden snuffers, pitchers, basins and bowls. Around the priest, stand five or six boys appropriately dressed, burning incense. Before the door at which we enter, and behind the altar, hangs the image of our Saviour nailed to the cross, while on either hand hangs a thief, and around, stands Mary, the mother of Jesus, Joseph, Pontius Pilate, Judas Iscariot, and others, who look with grief upon the sad spectacle. These figures are as large as life. Music, rich and solemn, now breaks upon the ear. The deep toned organs, send forth their thrilling tones from the lofty gallery, and now the full clear music of the human voice, is heard harmoniously joining with the deep tones of the organ. Anon, all is still; the silence becomes painful; but soon, again, is heard a low, rich sound, from the deep toned organ, which grows louder and fuller, till soon the whole house is filled with the rich melody.

The manner of burying the dead, is very different from anything I have ever witnessed. The priests always bury the dead. The procession leaves the house from whence the spirit of the departed took its flight, and slowly wends its way to the church; the bells toll a solemn peal. First in the procession, is a band of musicians, who, as they move slowly onward to the last resting place of him who has gone before them to the spirit land, send forth from their instruments of music, solemn and funereal strains. Next, is the priest, clad in a sable robe, and surrounded by six boys burning incense; now come twelve boys, carrying lighted waxen candles; after this a person bearing the cross, uplifted high, then the body of the deceased, borne upon the shoulders of four of his old companions. Now follow the kindred and mourning friends. As they pass on to the church, every one in the streets through which they pass, kneels down, and continues kneeling till the procession has passed.

The mode of life, of the people of this country, is somewhat different from ours. The people all sleep till very late in the morning; before rising they take a cup of coffee, at ten o'clock they take breakfast, and at twelve they dine; immediately after dinner the streets are deserted; each one takes a siesta, or nap, and spends his time in lounging till three o'clock, they then rise, take a cup of coffee, and the ladies retire to their dressing rooms. At dark, the streets become a perfect thoroughfare; ladies are out walking, visiting, calling and shopping till ten o'clock at night, at which time they go home to their suppers. After supper, they go to some place of amusement, to the gambling room, ball room, theatre, or a party, where they while away their time, in mirth and amusement. The ladies of Mexico are very beautiful, with small hands and feet, sparkling eyes and elegant figures. They are extremely polite and graceful in their movemenst.

Before I close this letter, I must teli you something about the fairs which are held here. A fair generally lasts from three to six weeks. Every person who has any thing he wishes to dispose of, brings it here at this time, knowing he shall have a favorable opportunity. The public square is surrounded by a row of tents, which are occupied by those who have sales to make. Here may be found all manner of merchandise, trinkets and jewelry: here, too, may be found cakes, pies, tarts, fruits, wines, and all kinds of refreshments. In one tent is a billiard room; in another a mountebank; here is a game of chess, and there a game of roulette. Eating, drinking, dancing and gaming, occupy day and night, perhaps, for six weeks in succession. At night the public square is illuminated, till it is as light as day, and the whole place is one complete blaze of light. Music of all kinds may be constantly heard, while the fair lasts. All is one complete scene of mirth and dissipation. Joy and festivity are on every hand.

If a person wishes for good living here, he had better be here in the time of lent. This is a forty days fast. But the only article of food from which they abstain, is meat. Everything which is a little nicer than common, is reserved for lent. In fact, the religion of these people requires them to spend about one third of their time in feasting and fasting; and a person wishing to spend a year or two, where he can partake of every kind of amusement, can find no better place than Mexico.

Your affectionate friend,

W. B. D.

LETTER XI.

San Antonio de Bexar, Texas,
March 6, 1828.

DEAR FRIEND:—It seems to me that the Republic of Mexico is destined to be forever revolutionizing. The Mexicans are never long at peace with each other; ignorant and degraded as many of them are, they are not capable of ruling nor yet of being ruled. Texas, being so far removed from the interior, is but little affected by these constant revolutions in Mexico; but I dwelling among them as I now am, am forced to feel in some degree the deplorable effect of the civil wars which threaten to deluge the whole of that beautiful and lovely land in blood.

In 1826, great excitement prevailed on the subject of suppressing the Masonic societies, in obedience to a bull fulminated by the reigning Pope. A bill to this effect was introduced into Congress, but was rejected. Soon all the men of influence throughout the whole country ranged themselves on one side or the other of the political factions, which were said to be under the guidance of the rival Scotch and English Lodges. The Escoses or Scotch, constituted a society of Scotch origin, composed of large proprietors and persons of distinction; they are mostly men of moderate principles and favorable to the cause of independence. Many of them have been in favor of a constitutional King of Mexico, chosen from the Bourbon family. The Yorkinos Lodge originated from a Masonic society in York, England; they are opposed to central or royal government—to the Bourbon family—and are in favor of the entire expulsion of the Spaniards from Mexico.

Towards the close of last year, the storm burst forth at Olumba, where Colonel Don Jose Montano published his plan for the forcible reform of the government, in order to counteract the growing influence of the Yorkinos.

In January last, General Bravo, the leader of the Escoses, and Vice President of the Republic, left Mexico, and uniting with the rebels, stationed himself at Tulancingo, where he issued a manifesto in favor of Montano. General Vicente Guerrero took the field, in behalf of the government, and succeeded in suppressing the insurrection, and Bravo and his associates were banished from the Republic.

Last year, an attempt was made by a body of adventurers and speculators, to erect Texas into a Republic, under the name of Fredonia; the revolutionists depending greatly upon the assistance of a number of Indian tribes with whom they had formed treaties. The principal objection of the Fredonians to the Mexican government was, the prohibition of slavery within its territory. The new government was however soon dissolved, and the Fredonians killed or dispersed by troops from San Antonio. Austin's colonists were not engaged in this mad business.

I have lately obtained the Constitution of the United States of Mexico, which you have so long desired, and now with a great deal of pleasure I will send you a copy of it.

CONSTITUTION OF THE MEXICAN UNITED STATES.

The Supreme Executive Power, provisionally appointed by the General Sovereign Congress of the Nation, to all who shall see these presents, *know and understand*, that the same Congress has decreed and sanctioned the following:

Federal Constitution of the United Mexican States.

In the name of God, all powerful, author and supreme legislator of society! The general constituent Congress of the Mexican Nation, in the discharge of the duties confided to them by their constituents, in order to establish and fix its political independence, establish and confirm its liberty, and promote its prosperity and glory, decree as follows:

CONSTITUTION OF THE UNITED MEXICAN STATES.

TITLE 1ST. ONLY SECTION. *Of the Mexican Nation, its Territory and Religion.*

ARTICLE 1. The Mexican Nation, is forever free and independent of the Spanish government, and every other power.

2. Its territory consists of that which was formerly called the vice-royalty of New Spain, that styled the captain generalship of Tweaton, that of the commandant generalship, formerly called the Internal Provinces of East and West, and that of Lower and Upper California, with the lands annexed, and the adjacent lands in both seas. By a constitutional law, a demarkation of the limits of the Federation, will be made as soon as circumstances will permit.

3. The religion of the Mexican Nation, is, and will be, perpetually, the Roman Catholic Apostolic. The

Nation will protect it by wise and just laws, and prohibit the exercise of any other whatever.

TITLE 2d. ONLY SECTION.—*Form of Government of the Nation, of its integral parts and division of Supreme Power.*

4. The Mexican Nation adopts, for its Government, the form of Republican representative, popular Federal.

5. The parts of this Federation, are the States and Territories as follows: The States of Chipas, Chihuahua, Coahuila and Texas, Durango, Guanajuanto, Mexico, Michoacan, New Leon Oajaco, Puebla de los Angelos, Quertaro, San Luis Potosi, Sinora and Sinaloa, Tobasco, Tamaulipas, Vera Cruz, Xalixo, Yucatan, Zacatecas, the Territory of Upper California, Lower California, Colima and Santa Fe of New Mexico,—a constitutional law shall fix the character of Tlaxala.

6. The Supreme Power of the Federation will be divided for its exercises into Legislative, Executive, and Judicial.

TITLE 3D. SECTION 1ST. *Legislative power, of its motive and the mode of exercising it.*

7. The legislative power of the Federation, shall be disposed in a General Congress, this is to be divided in two houses, one of Deputies (Representatives) and the other of Senators.

SECTION 2D. *Of the House of Representatives.*

8. The House of Representatives shall be composed of Representatives elected totally every two years, by the citizens of the States.

9. The qualifications of the electors shall be constitutionally prescribed by the legislatures of the States;

to whom, likewise, appertains the regulation of its elections, in conformity with the principles established by this Constitution.

10. The general basis for the appointment of representatives, shall be the population.

11. For every 80,000 souls, one Representative shall be appointed, or for a fraction which passes 40,000. The State which may not contain this population, shall notwithstanding appoint one Representative.

12. A census of the whole Federation, which shall be formed in five years, and renewed every ten, shall serve to designate the number of Deputies corresponding to each State; and in the meantime, it shall be regulated agreeably to the basis established in the former article, by the census which governed in the election of Deputies in the present Congress.

13. In the same manner shall be elected in each State, the necessary number of supernumerary representatives in the ratio of one for every three full representatives, or for a fraction amounting to two, the States which may contain less than three full representatives, shall elect one supernumerary.

14. The Territory which shall contain more than 40,000 inhabitants, shall appoint a full representative and one supernumerary, who shall have a voice and vote in the formation of laws and decrees.

15. The Territory which may not contain the foregoing number of population, shall appoint one full representative and one supernumerary, who shall be entitled to a voice in all matters. The election of Representatives for the Territories shall be regulated by a special law.

16. In every State and Territory of the Federation, the appointment of Representatives shall be made on the first Sunday in October previous to its renovation. The election to be indirect.

17. The election of Representatives concluded, the electoral college shall remit through their President to the Council of Government, a legal return of the election and notify the elected of their appointment, by an official letter, which shall serve as a credential of election.

18. The President of the Council of Government shall give to the returns referred to in the preceding article, the direction prescribed by the regulations of said Council.

19. To be a Representative, it is required, first, to be at the time of the election, twenty-five years of age, complete; second, to have been a resident of the State, from which elected, at least two years, or born in the State, although a resident in another.

20. Those not born in the territory of the Mexican nation, to be Representatives, must have besides eight years' residence in it, eight thousand dollars of real estate in any part of the Republic, or an occupation that produces them one thousand dollars per year.

21. Exceptions to the foregoing article—first, those born in any other part of America, that in 1810 appertained to Spain, and has not united itself to another nation, nor remain subject to the former, to whom three years' residence in the Territory of the Federation is sufficient, in addition to the requisite prescribed in the 19th article. Second, the military not born in the Territory of the Republic who with arms sustained the

independence of the country, eight years' residence complete, is sufficient, and the requisites prescribed in the nineteenth article.

22. In the election of Representatives actual residence shall have preference over birth and non-residence.

23. These cannot be representatives: First,—Those deprived or suspended from the rights of citizenship. Second,—The President and Vice President of the Federation. Third,—The members of the Supreme Judicial Court. Fourth,—Secretaries of the Cabinet, and the officers of their departments. Fifth,—Those employed in the Treasury, whose functions extend over the whole Federation. Sixth,—Governors of States and Territories, Commandant Generals, Archbishops and Bishops, Governors of Archbishoprics and Bishoprics, Provisors and Vicar Generals, Circuit Judges, Commissary Generals of Treasury and War, for the States and Territories over which they exercise their functions.

24. In order that any person enumerated in the foregoing article, may be eligible, it is necessary they should have ceased their functions, six months previous to their election.

SECTION 3D. *Of the Senate.*

25. The Senate shall be composed of two Senators from each State, elected by an absolute majority of the votes of the Legislature, and renewed by one-half every two years.

26. The seats of the Senators appointed in the second place, shall be vacated in two years, and the first appointed, in four years; and so on in succession.

27. When a vacancy occurs by death, resignation,

or other cause, it shall be filled by the corresponding Legislature in session, if not, as soon as it meets.

28. To be a Senator, it is necessary to possess all the qualifications required by the former section to be a Representative; and, moreover, to be at the time of the election, thirty years of age.

29. No person can be a Senator, who is disqualified from being a Representative.

30. In the election of Senators, the 22d article shall also govern.

31. When the same individual is elected for a Senator and Representative, the first election shall have the preference.

32. The periodical election of Senators, shall be made in all the States on the same day, which shall be on the first day of September, previous to the renewal of half the Senators.

33. The election of Senators concluded, the Legislature shall remit a legal return through their President, to the President of the Council of Government, and notify the elected of their appointment, by means of an official letter, which shall serve them as credentials. The President of the Council of Government, shall give the directions to these returns, indicated in the eighteenth article.

SECTION 4TH. *Of the individual functions of both Houses, and prerogatives of the Members.*

34. Each House in its preparatory meeting, and in every thing appertaining to its government, shall follow the rule formed by the present Congress; provided,

that amendments may be made to them in future, should both houses consider it necessary.

35. Each House shall judge of the elections of its respective members, and resolve all doubts which may occur in them.

36. The Houses cannot open their sessions without the presence of more than half of the total number of their members; but those present of one and the other must unite on the day appointed for the regulation of the internal government of each, and, respectively, compel the attendance of the absentees, under the penalties prescribed by the law.

37. The Houses will communicate with one another, and with the Supreme Executive Power, by means of their respective Secretaries, or by means of deputations.

38. Either of the two Houses may sit as Grand Jurors, on accusations: First—Against the President of the Federation, for the crime of treason against the National Independence, or the established form of Government, or for subornation or bribery, during the time of his services. Second,—Also against the President, for acts manifestly intended to impede the election of President, Senators, or Representatives; or to prevent them from entering on the exercise of their duties in the manner prescribed in this Constitution, or to deprive the chambers of the use of any of the powers constitutionally vested in them. Third,—Against the members of the Supreme Court, and the Secretaries of the departments, for any crime committed during the time of their service. Fourth,—Against the Governors of the States, for infractions on the Federal Constitution,

laws of the Union, or orders of the President of the Federation, which may not be manifestly contrary to the Constitution and general laws of the Union, and, likewise, by the publication of laws and decrees of the Legislatures of their respective States, contrary to the same Constitution and laws.

39. The House of Representatives will exclusively form a Grand Jury, when the President or his ministers may be accused of acts, in which the Senate or the Council of Government have concurred, by reason of its attributions. The House will, in the same manner, serve as Grand Juror in cases of accusation against the Vice President, for any offence committed during the term of his service.

40. The House before which has been made the accusation of the individual, spoken of in the two preceding articles, will form itself in a Grand Jury, and if it is declared by the votes of two-thirds of the members present that there is cause of accusation, the functions of the accused shall be suspended, and he shall be placed at the disposition of the competent tribunal.

41. Any Representative or Senator can make any proposition in writing, or present projects of a law or decree, in his respective chamber.

42. The Representatives and Senators shall be inviolable for the opinions manifested in the discharge of their duties, and never can be called to account for them.

43. In all criminal prosecutions instituted against Senators or Representatives, from the time of their

election, until two months after the expiration of their term of service, the former shall be accused before the chamber of the latter, and the latter before that of the former; each chamber composing a Grand Jury respectively for this object.

44. If the chamber sitting as a Grand Jury, in the cases referred to in the last article, declare, by a vote of two-thirds of the members present, that there is cause for accusation, the accused shall be suspended, and placed at the disposition of the competent tribunal.

45. The emoluments of the Representatives and Senators shall be determined by law, and paid from the general treasury of the Federation.

46. Each House, and also the meetings spoken of in the 36th article, shall have power to deliver such orders as they may deem necessary to carry their resolutions into effect, issued by virtue of the functions granted to each by the 35th, 36th, 39th, 40th, 44th, and 45th articles of the Constitution, and the President of the United States shall cause them to be executed without making any observations upon them.

SECTION 5TH. *Of the faculties of the General Congress.*

47. Every resolution of the General Congress shall have the character of a law or decree.

48. The resolutions of the General Congress to be entitled to the force of law or decree, must be signed by the President, except in cases otherwise provided in this Constitution.

49. The laws and decrees which emanate from the General Congress, shall have for object—first, to sustain

the National Independence, and provide for the National security and preservation of its exterior relations; second, to preserve the Federal Union of the States, and the peace and public order of the interior of the Federation; third, maintain the independence of the States among themselves, in all that relates to their interior government, in conformity to the constitutional act and this Constitution; fourth, sustain the proportional equality of obligations and rights, which the States are entitled to before the law.

50. The exclusive faculties of the General Congress are the following—first, promote illustration, assuring for a limited time exclusive rights to authors for their respective works; establishing colleges for marine and artillery engineers; erecting one or more establishments in which are to be taught natural, political, and moral sciences, noble arts and the languages, without prejudice to the power which the legislatures have to regulate public education in their respective States. Second, promote the general prosperity by opening and improving roads and canals, without impeding the States in the improvement of theirs; establishing mails and post-offices, and securing for a limited time exclusive right to the inventors, perfectioners, or introducers of any branch of industry, for their respective inventions, perfections, or new introductions. Third, protect and regulate the political liberty of the press, in order that its exercises may never be suspended, and much less abolished in any of the States and Territories of the Federation. Fourth, admit new States to the Federal Union or Territories incorporating them in the

Nation. Fifth, regulate definitively, the limits of the States, when they cannot agree among themselves about the demarkation of their respective districts. Sixth, form States out of Territories or unite them to those already existing. Seventh, unite two or more States by a petition of their legislatures to form one only, or form a new one from the limits of those that already exist, with the approbation of three-fourths of the members present of both houses, and a ratification of an equal number of the legislatures of the other States of the Union. Eighth, fix the general expenses, establish the necessary contributions to cover them, regulate their collection, determine the inversion, and take annually accounts thereof from the government. Ninth, contract debts upon the credit of the Federation, and designate guarantees to cover them. Tenth, acknowledge the National Debt and designate means for its consolidation and payment. Eleventh, regulate the commerce with foreign nations, and among the different States and tribes of Indians. Twelfth, give instructions to celebrate covenants with the Apostolic Chairs, approve them for their ratification, and regulate the exercise of the patronage in all parts of the Nation. Thirteenth, approve treaties of peace, alliance, friendship, federation, armed neutrality, and whatsoever others which the President of the United States may celebrate with foreign powers. Fourteenth, to establish all kinds of ports, custom-houses, and designate their location. Fifteenth, determine and regulate the weight, standard value, type and denomination of money in all the States of the Federation, and adopt a general system of weights and measures. Sixteenth, declare war, after examining the data prescribed by the President of the United States. Seventeenth, form regulations relative to granting letters of marque and reprisal, and to declare good or bad captures by sea and land. Eighteenth, designate the armed force of sea and land, fix the respective quota of men to each State, and give orders and regulations for their organization and service. Nineteenth, form regulations to organise, arm, and discipline the local militia of the State, reserving to each one the appointment of their respective officers, and the faculty of training them conformably to the discipline prescribed by said regulations. Twentieth, to grant or deny the entrance of foreign troops in the territory of the Federation. Twenty-first, permit or not the station of squadrons of any other power for more than one month in the Mexican ports. Twenty-second, permit or not the departure of National troops without the limits of the Federation. Twenty-third, create or suppress public offices of the Federation, designate, augment, or diminish their emoluments and pensions. Twenty-fourth, grant premiums and recompense to corporations or persons, who have rendered important services to the Republic, and decree public honors to the posthumous memory of great men. Twenty-fifth, grant amnesty or pardon for crimes, the cognisance of which appertains to the tribunals of the Federation in the cases, and with the previous requirements prescribed by law. Twenty-sixth, to establish a general law of naturalization. Twenty-seventh, to give uniform laws in every State on the subject of bankruptcies. Twenty-eighth, to select a place to serve as a residence for the supreme powers of the Federation, and exercise within its limits the attributions of the legislative powers of the State. Twenty-ninth, to change such residence when they may deem it necessary. Thirtieth, give laws and decrees for the regulations of the interior administration of the Territories. Thirty-first, to dictate all the laws and decrees that may be conducive to fulfill the object spoken of in the 49th article, without interfering with the interior administration of the State.

SECTION 6TH. *Formation of the Laws.*

51. The formation of laws and decrees can proceed indiscriminately from either of the two Houses, with the exception of those which arise from contributions or imposts, which cannot have origin except in the House of Representatives.

52. There shall be considered as incipients of law or decree,—first, the propositions which the President of the United Mexican States may deem conducive to the general good of society, and as such particularly recommend them to the House of Representatives; second, the propositions or plans of laws and decrees which the legislature may direct to either House.

53. All projects of a law or decree, without any exception, shall be successively discussed in both Houses, observing in each with exactitude, the rules relative to the form of debates, interval and mode of proceeding in discussing and voting.

54. The projects of a law or decree, rejected in the House where it originated, before being sent to the other House, shall not be renewed in the same House by its

members in the sessions of that year, but must remain until the following year.

55. If the project of a law or decree, after having been debated, should be approved by the absolute majority of the members present of both Houses, shall be passed to the President of the United States, who also if he approves it, shall sign and publish it, and if not, return it, with his observations, within the term of ten days (Sundays and solemn festivals excepted), to the House of its origin.

56. The project of a law or decree returned by the President, in conformity with the preceding article, shall be a second time discussed in the two Houses. If in both of these it should be approved by two-thirds of the members present, it shall again be returned to the President, who, without excuse, must sign and publish it; but if it was not approved by the vote of two-thirds of both Houses, it cannot be renewed in either of them until the next year.

57. If the President does not return any project of law or decree within the time prescribed in the 55th article, it shall from that circumstance be considered as sanctioned, and as such shall be promulgated, unless in the mean time the session of Congress should be closed or suspended, in which case the return must be made on the first day in which Congress shall be re-assembled.

58. The project of a law or decree, totally rejected for the first time by the House to which it has been sent, shall be returned with their observations to the one in which it originated, if after a re-examination the said House shall again approve of it by a vote of two-

thirds of the members present, it shall be sent a second time to the house that rejected it, who cannot a second time reject it without a concurrence of two-thirds of the members present.

59. The project of a law or decree approved of after a second revision by two-thirds of the members of the House where it originated, and not rejected by two-thirds of the members of the other House, shall be sent to the President, who shall sign and publish it, or return it within ten days (Sundays, &c., excepted), to the House where it originated, with his observations.

60. The project of a law or decree, which, according to the foregoing article, the President returned to the House of its origin, shall again be taken into consideration, and if this approves it by a vote of two-thirds of the members present, and the revising body does not reject by an equal number of its members, it shall be returned to the President, who must publish it. But if it was not approved by the vote of two-thirds of the House of its origin, or was rejected by an equal number of the revising body, it cannot be renewed until the ordinary subsequent sessions.

61. In the event of the rejection a second time, of the revising body, in conformity with the 58th Article, the project shall be considered rejected and cannot be reconsidered until the following year.

62. In the amendments which the revising body make to any project or decree, there shall be observed the same formalities required before the project of a law can be sent to the President.

63. The parts of a project of a law or decree,

rejected for the first time by the revising body, shall take the same course as those totally rejected by it for the first time.

64. In the interpretation, modification, or revocation of the laws or decrees, the same requisites shall be observed which are prescribed for their formation.

65. All resolutions of the General Congress communicated to the President of the Republic, must be signed by the Presidents of both Houses, and by a Secretary of each one of them.

66. For the formation of every law or decree it is necessary that an absolute majority of all the members of each House should be present in the respective Houses.

Section 7th. *Of the time, duration, and place of the sessions of the General Congress.*

67. The General Congress shall meet every year, on the first day of January, at the place designated by law; its internal rules shall prescribe the previous forms necessary at the opening of its sessions and the formalities which are to be observed at its installation.

68. The President of the Federation shall assist at the installation, and pronounce a discourse analogous to this important act; and the persons who preside in Congress shall answer it in general terms.

69. The ordinary sessions of Congress shall be daily without any other interruption than that of the days of solemn festival; and, in order to adjourn for more than three days, the consent of both Houses shall be necessary.

70. Both Houses shall reside in the same place, and

cannot remove to another without first agreeing on the removal, the time and manner of effecting it, designating the same point for the reunion of one and the other. But, if they agree on a removal, and differ as to the time, mode, and place, the President of the States shall determine the difference, electing one of those in question.

71. The Congress shall close its sessions annually on the 15th day of April, with the same formalities as are prescribed for its opening, proroguing the session thirty days (Sundays and solemn festivals excepted), when they may deem it necessary, or when the President of the Federation requires.

72. When the General Congress is assembled for extraordinary sessions it shall be formed of the same Representatives and Senators as the ordinary sessions of that year, and shall occupy itself exclusively on the object or objects for which it was convened; but, if these should not be completed on the day in which the ordinary sessions are to commence, the extraordinary session shall cease and the subject pending shall be determined by Congress in said ordinary sessions.

73. The resolutions that the Congress take relative to the removal, suspension, or prorogation of their sessions, agreeably to the three preceding articles shall be communicated to the President, who shall cause them to be executed without making any observations upon them.

TITLE 4TH. SECTION 1ST. *Of the Supreme Executive Power of the Nation.*

74. The Supreme Executive power of the Federation,

shall be deposited in one individual, who shall be styled *President of the United Mexican States.*

75 There shall likewise be a Vice President, on whom will devolve the faculties and prerogatives of the President, in case of his physical or moral inability to serve.

76. To be President or Vice President, it is required to be a Mexican citizen by birth, thirty-five years of age at the time of the election, and to be a resident in the country.

77. The President cannot be re-elected for this office, until after four years are passed, from the time of his retirement.

78. He that is elected President or Vice President of the Republic, shall accept these offices in preference to any others.

79. The first day of September, anterior to the year in which the new President must enter on the exercise of his duties, the Legislature of each State, shall elect, by an absolute majority of votes, two individuals, one of which, at least, must not be a native of the State that elects.

80. The voting concluded, the Legislature shall remit to the President of the Council of Government, a legal return of the election, in order that he may give it the course designated by the rules of the Council.

81. The sixth of January afterwards, the said returns shall be read in presence of both Houses united, provided, those of three-fourths of the Legislatures of the States, have been received.

82. The reading of said returns concluded, the

Senators shall retire, and a committee appointed by the House of Representatives, and composed of one for each State of those that have Representatives present, shall revise them, and render an account of the result.

83. The House shall then proceed to class the elections, and enumerate the votes.

84. He who has an absolute majority of the votes of all the Legislatures, shall be President.

85. If two should have said majority, he shall be President who has the most votes, and the other the Vice President. In case of a tie with said majority, the House of Representatives shall elect one of the two, for President, and the other shall be Vice President.

86. If no one should have the absolute majority of the votes of the Legislature, the House of Representatives shall elect the President and Vice President, choosing in each election, one of the two which had the greatest number of suffrages.

87. When more than two individuals have a respective majority and equal number of votes, the House shall choose from them the President or Vice President, as the case may be.

88. If one has received the respective majority, and two or more have an equal number of suffrages, but greater than the others, the House shall elect from those who have the greatest number of votes.

89. If all have an equal number of votes, the House shall elect from among them all the President and Vice President, doing the same when one has a number of suffrages, and the others an equal number.

90. If there should be a tie upon the voting of the

classing of the elections made by the Legislatures the votes shall be repeated once, and if it should result in a tie, shall be decided by lot.

91. In the competitions between three or more that have an equal number of votes, the voting shall be directed to the deduction of the competitors to two or one, in order that in the election he may contend with the other, that may have obtained a relative majority over all the others.

92. For a general rule in voting relative to the election of President and Vice President, they shall not refer to lots before having made a second vote.

93. The voting on classifications of elections made by the Legislatures, and on those made by the House of Representatives for President and Vice President, shall be made by States, the representation of each one having a single vote, and in order that there may be a decision in the House, it must contain an absolute majority of the votes.

94. In order to deliberate on the objects contained in the foregoing article, there must be united in the House more than half of the total number of its members, and be present Representatives from three-fourths of the States.

SECTION 2D. *Duration of the offices of President and Vice President, manner of filling the vacancies of both, and their oaths.*

95. The President and Vice President of the Federation, shall enter on the discharge of their duties on the first of April, and shall be replaced precisely on the same day every four years by a new constitutional election.

96. If for any motive the elections for President and Vice President are not made and published by the first of April, when they ought to take their seats, or those elected should not immediately enter on the discharge of their duties, nevertheless the former ones shall go out of office the same day, and the supreme executive power shall be deposited provisionally in a President that shall be elected in the House of Representatives voting by States.

97. In case the President should be indisposed, then the provisions in the preceding article, shall have effect, and if both should be at the same time, and Congress not being in session, the Supreme Executive Power shall be deposited in the hands of the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, and two individuals that shall be elected by an absolute plurality of votes by the Council of Government; these are not to be members of the General Congress, and are to have the qualities requisite to be a President of the Federation.

98. Until the elections are made to which the preceding articles allude, the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court shall be charged with the Supreme Executive Power.

99. In case of the perpetual inability of the President and Vice President to serve, Congress, or in its recess the Council of Government, will respectively provide according to articles 96 and 97, and so depose that the Legislatures proceed to the election of President and Vice President, according to the form prescribed by the Constitution.

100. The election of President and Vice President,

made by the Legislatures, in consequence of the perpetual inability of those to serve who had been elected for these offices, shall not impede the ordinary elections the first of September every four years.

101. The President and Vice President newly elected, must be on the first day of April, in the place where the supreme powers of the Federation reside, and before both Houses assembled, swear to observe the duties imposed on them under the following form:

"I. N.—Elected President (or Vice President) of the United Mexican States, swear before God and the Holy Evangelists, that I will exercise faithfully the charge which the same United States have confided in me, and that I will keep, and cause to be exactly kept, the Constitution and the general laws of the Federation."

102. If neither the President or Vice President present themselves to swear, as the preceding article provides, and the session of Congress being open, they shall swear before the Council of Government as soon as each one presents himself.

103. If the Vice President takes the oath prescribed in article 101, before the President, he shall enter immediately on the discharge of the duties of President, until he shall have sworn.

104. The President and Vice President constitutionally appointed according to article 99, and those individuals provisionally appointed to exercise the charge of President, according to articles 96 and 97, shall be sworn as prescribed in article 101, before both Houses, if assembled, if not, before the Council of Government.

SECTION 3D. *Of the prerogatives of the President and Vice President.*

105. The President has the power to lay before Congress such propositions or amendments of laws as he may deem conducive to the general good, directing them to the House of Representatives.

106. The President has the power once in ten days (Sundays and solemn festivals excepted), to make observations upon the laws and decrees passed to him by Congress, suspending their publication until the resolution of Congress, except in the cases mentioned in this Constitution.

107. The President, during the time of his administration, cannot be accused, except before either of the Houses, and only in crimes alluded to in article 38, committed in the time therein expressed.

108. Within one year from the day on which the President ceases his functions, he cannot be accused, except before one of the Houses, for crimes alluded to in article 38, or any others committed during the term of his administration; after this, he cannot be accused for those crimes.

109. The Vice President, during the four years of his administration, cannot be accused, except before the House of Representatives, for whatever crime he commits during the time of his administration.

SECTION 4TH. *Attributions of the President and the restrictions of the faculties.*

110. The attributions of the President are the following:—First, to publish, circulate, and cause to be kept the laws and decrees of the General Congress.

counsellors present, as stated in attributions seventeen and eighteen, of article 110. Fourth,—to grant their consent to the calling out of the local militia, in the manner stated in article 110, attribution eleven. Fifth,—to approve the appointment of officers, designated in attribution six, of article 110. Sixth,—to give their consent in the case referred to in article 112, restriction first. Seventh,—to name two individuals, who shall, in conjunction with the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, provisionally exercise the Supreme Executive Power, as prescribed in the 97th article. Eighth,—to administer the oath stated in article 101, to those individuals of the Supreme Executive Power, in the terms provided in this Constitution. Ninth,—to give their opinion on subjects referred to them, by the President, by virtue of the twenty-first faculty of article 110, and all business wherein he may consult them.

SECTION 6TH. *Of the dispatch of Government business.*

117. For a dispatch of Government business of the Republic, there shall be the number of Secretaries of State, which Congress, by a law, may establish.

118. All the regulations, decrees, and orders of the President, must be signed by the Secretary of State, of the department to which the subject belongs, and without this pre-requisite they will not be obeyed.

119. The Secretaries of State shall be responsible for the acts of the President, unauthorized by their signatures, contrary to the Constitution, constitutional act, and general laws and constitutions of the States.

120. The Secretaries of State shall give to each

House, as soon as their annual sessions are opened, an account of the state of their respective departments.

121. To be a Secretary of State, it is necessary to be a Mexican citizen by birth.

122. The Secretaries of State shall form a regulation for the better distribution and direction of their duties, which shall be passed by the Government to the Congress for their approbation.

TITLE 5TH. SECTION 1ST. *Of the Judicial Power of the Confederation.*

123. The Judicial Power of the Federation, shall reside in one Supreme Court of Justice, and in the Circuit and District Courts.

SECTION 2ND. *Of the Supreme Court of Justice, the election, term of service, and oath of its Members.*

124. The Supreme Court of Justice shall be composed of eleven members, divided into three halls, and one Attorney General. Congress may augment or diminish its number, as they deem it necessary.

125. To be elected a Judge of the Supreme Court of Justice, it is necessary to have been instructed in the science of public rights, according to the judgments of the Legislatures of the States; to be thirty-five years of age; to be a native born citizen of the Republic, or born in any part of America, which, in 1810, was dependent on Spain, and has separated from her, provided, they have been five years resident within the territory of the Republic.

126. The Judges of the Supreme Court of Justice, shall hold their offices during good behaviour, and can only be removed in the mode prescribed by the laws.

127. The election of the Judges of the Supreme Court of Justice, shall be made on the same day by the Legislatures of the States, by an absolute majority of votes.

128. The elections concluded, each Legislature shall remit to the Council of Government a certified list of the twelve persons elected, designating which one of them was elected the Attorney General.

129. The President of the Council, as soon as he shall have received the lists from at least three-fourths of the Legislatures of the States, shall give them the directions indicated by the rules of the Council.

130. On the day designated, the Congress shall open and read the said lists in presence of both Houses united, after which the Senate shall retire.

131. In continuation, the House of Representatives shall appoint by an absolute majority of votes a committee, which shall be composed of one member from each State from which there was any member present, to which committee the said lists shall be passed, who will revise and examine them, and render an account of the result; and the House shall then proceed to class the election and count the votes.

132. The individual or individuals who may have received more than half the whole number of the Legislatures, without regard to the number of votes given by their respective members, shall be considered elected; and the declaration of the House to that effect shall immediately entitle them to their seats.

133. Should those who may have received the necessary majority of votes agreeably to the last article not

amount to twelve, the House shall elect the balance from those who had the highest number of votes before the Legislatures, observing in every thing relative to these elections the provisions of the first section of the fourth title, which treats of the election of President and Vice President.

134. Should a Senator or Representative be elected a Judge of the Supreme Court of Justice, his election to that office shall be preferred over the other.

135. When a vacancy occurs in a Supreme Court of Justice by perpetual inability, it shall be filled agreeably to this section, after a previous notification given by the Governor to the Legislature of the State, of said vacancy.

136. The members of the Supreme Court of Justice on entering upon the exercise of the office, shall take an oath in the presence of the President of the Republic in the following form: "You swear to God our Lord, faithfully to discharge the duties and obligations confided to you by the nation—if you do this, God will reward you, if otherwise, he will punish you."

SECTION 3D. "*Of the attributions of the Supreme Court of Justice.*"

137. The attributions of the Supreme Court are the following:—First, to take cognizance of the difference which may arise between one and another State of the Federation, whenever it embraces a subject of litigation in which there must be a formal sentence, and those that arise between one State and one or more inhabitants of another, or between individuals about pretensions to lands under concession from States without depriving

the party of the right of reclaiming the concession from the authority which granted it. Second, to terminate all disputes which may arise, or contracts or negotiations made by the Supreme Government or its agents. Third, consult relative to publishing or retaining of Pontifical Bulls, Briefs, and Rescripts issued in matters litigant. Fourth, adjust any dispute that may exist among the tribunals of the Federation, and between these and those of the States, and those which may arise between the tribunals of one State and those of another. Fifth, to take connoissance—first, of the prosecutions moved against the President and Vice President according to articles 38 and 39, after the previous declaration in article 40; second, of the criminal prosecutions of the Representatives and Senators, indicated in article 43, after the previous declaration required in article 44; third, of those against Governors of the States in the cases spoken of in article 38, in its third part, after the previous declaration required in article 40; fourth, of those Secretaries of State in conformity with articles 38 and 40; fifth, of the civil and criminal affairs of the Diplomatic Ministers and Consuls of the Republic; sixth, of the Admiralty cases, captures by sea, land, and contraband, of crimes committed on the high sea, of the offences against the United Mexican States, of those employed in the Treasury and Judiciary of the Federation and of the infractions of the Constitution and general laws, as may be provided for by law.

138. A law shall regulate the mode and grade by which the Supreme Court of Justice shall take cognizance of the cases comprehended in this section.

SECTION 4TH. *Of the mode of judging the members of the Supreme Court.*

139. In order to judge the members of the Supreme Court, the House of Representatives shall elect, voting by States in the first month of the ordinary sessions of each biennial, twenty-four individuals not appertaining to the General Congress, and who shall possess the qualifications required for Judges of the Supreme Court, from these there shall be elected by lot, an Attorney General, and an equal number of Judges equal to that which composes the first Hall of the Court, and whenever it may be necessary, the same House shall proceed, and in its recess the Council of Government, to draw in the same manner Judges of the other Halls.

SECTION. 5TH. *Of the Circuit Courts.*

140. The Circuit Court shall be composed of a Judge of the law and a Prosecuting Attorney, both appointed by the Supreme Executive Power, proposed by the Supreme Court, and two Associate Judges, as the law may prescribe.

141. In order to be a Circuit Judge it is necessary to be a citizen of the Federation, and thirty years of age.

142. To the tribunals, corresponds the cognizance of admiralty cases, captures by sea and land, contraband crimes committed on the high seas, offences against the United Mexican States, cases of consuls, and civil cases whose value exceeds five hundred dollars, and in which the Federation are interested. By a law shall be designated the number of these Tribunals, their respective jurisdictions, their mode, form, and the manner in which they must exercise their powers in these and

Second, to give rules and decrees, and orders for the better observance of the Constitution, constitutional act, and general laws. Third, to put into execution the laws and decrees directed to preserve the integrity of the Federation, and to sustain its independence in its exterior together with its union and liberty in its interior. Fourth, to name and remove freely Secretaries of the departments. Fifth, to direct the collection, and decree the inversion, of general contributions agreeably to the laws. Sixth, to name the officers of the treasury department and those of the commissary generals, diplomatic ministers and consuls, colonels and other superior officers of the permanent army, active militia and navy, with the approbation of the Senate; and, should it not be in session, with the Council of the Government. Seventh, to name all other officers of the permanent army, navy, and active militia, and officers of the Federation, conformably to the laws. Eighth, to appoint, after previous recommendation from the Supreme Court, judges and attorney generals of the Circuit and District. Ninth, to grant discharges, grant licences, and regulate military pensions according to law. Tenth, to dispose of the permanent armed force by sea and land, and the active militia for the security of the interior, and defence of the exterior of the Federation. Eleventh, to dispose of the local militia for the same purposes; but to take them out of their respective States or Territories, it will require the previous consent of Congress, who will also designate the force necessary. Should Congress not be assembled, the consent of the Council of Government will be necessary, and who will also designate the number. Twelfth, to declare war in the name of the United Mexican States, after a previous decree of Congress to that effect, and to grant commissions to privateers in conformity with the laws. Thirteenth, to celebrate covenants with the Apostolic Chair, as designated in clause 12th of article 50. Fourteenth, to direct diplomatic negotiations, and to celebrate treaties of peace, amity, truce, federation, armed neutrality, commerce, alliance, and all others: but to give or deny the ratification of any of them, requires the approbation of the General Congress. Fifteenth, to receive ministers and other envoys from foreign nations. Sixteenth, to request Congress to prorogue their sessions for thirty days, (Sundays, &c. excepted.) Seventeenth, to assemble Congress for extraordinary sessions, as he may deem the case necessary, by the consent of two-thirds of the Council of Government present. Eighteenth, also to assemble an extraordinary session of Congress, whenever by the Council of Government it shall be deemed necessary, and the votes of two-thirds of the members present is given to that effect. Nineteenth, to see that justice is promptly and impartially administered by the Supreme Courts, Tribunals, and inferior courts of the Federation, and that their sentences be executed according to law. Twentieth, to suspend from their employments, for the space of three months, and deprive one-half of their pay for the same time, all officers of the Federation, violaters of its orders and decrees; and should there be cause for a prosecution against such officers, he shall place the subject before its proper tribunal. Twenty-first, to grant the passage or retain the decrees of the Ecclesiastical Councils, Pontifical Bulls, Briefs, and Rescripts, with the consent of the General Congress, if they contain general dispositions; to be laid before the Senate, or in its recess, before the Council of Government, if containing governmental business, and before the Supreme Court of Justice if it is a subject of litigation.

111. The President, in publishing laws and decrees, shall use the following form:—The President of the United Mexican States to the inhabitants of the Republic, *Know* that the General Congress have decreed the following: (here the subject,) Therefore, I command that it be printed, published, and circulated, and that due compliance be given it."

112. The restrictions of the faculties of the President are the following:—First, the President cannot take command of the force by sea or land in person, without the previous consent of the General Congress; or, should it not be in session, without the Council of Government, by a vote of two-thirds of the members present. When he takes the command with these requisites, the Vice President shall administer the Government. Second, the President has not the right to deprive any one of his liberty, nor inflict punishment on any individual; but, when the safety of the Federation requires it, he can arrest any person, provided he places the person arrested, within forty-eight hours at the disposition of the competent judge or tribunal. Third, the President cannot occupy the property of any individual or corporation; it will require the approbation

of the Senate, or, in its recess, the approbation of the Council of Government, indemnifying the party interested, by the decision of men chosen by the party and the Government. Fourth, the President cannot impede the elections and other acts expressed in the last clause of the 38th Article. Fifth, the President or Vice President cannot leave the Territory of the Republic without the consent of Congress, during the discharge of their duties, and for one year after they retire from office.

SECTION 5TH. *Of the Council of Government.*

113. During the recess of Congress there shall be a Council of Government, composed of one half of the members of the Senate, one for each State.

114. For the first two years the Council of Government shall be composed of the first members elected by their respective Legislatures, and the succeeding year, by the oldest members.

115. This Council shall have for President the Vice-President of the United States, and also have the power to elect a President pro tem. to fill the vacancy occasioned by the absence of the other.

116. The attributions of this Council are the following: First,—to see that the Constitution is strictly observed, and the constitutional act, and general laws; and to give their advice in any incident relative to these objects. Second,—to lay before the President any observations, conducive for the better compliance of the Constitution and laws of the Union. Third,—to determine of themselves, or by the advice of the President, the calling of extraordinary sessions of Congress; but in either case, it shall require the vote of two-thirds of the

other matters which come under the cognizance of the Supreme Court of Justice.

SECTION 6TH. *Of the District Courts.*

143. The United Mexican States shall be divided into a certain number of districts, and in each one of which there shall be a tribunal, presided by a Judge of the law, which shall take cognizance without appeal of all civil cases in which the Federation is interested, the amount of which does not exceed five hundred dollars, and shall have original jurisdiction in all cases in which the Circuit Courts have appellate jurisdiction.

144. In order to be a District Judge, it is necessary to be a citizen of the United Mexican States and twenty-five years of age. The Judges shall be appointed by the President, proposed by the Supreme Court.

SECTION 7TH. *General Rules to which all the States and Territories in the Federation shall conform in the administration of justice.*

145. In each one of the States of the Federation, full faith and credit shall be given to the acts, registers, and proceedings of the Judges, and other authorities of the other States. The General Congress shall regulate the laws by which said acts, registers, and proceedings shall be authenticated.

146. The sentence of infamy shall in no case extend beyond the criminal, that may have merited it according to law.

147. There is forever prohibited the penalty of confiscation of estates.

148. There is forever prohibited all judgments by commission and retro-active laws.

149. No authority shall apply any species of torture, whatever may be the nature or state of the prosecution.

150. No one shall be imprisoned unless there is a reasonable ground to suppose him criminal.

151. No one shall be imprisoned on suspicion, more than seventy hours.

152. No authority shall give an order for the search of any houses, papers, and other effects of the inhabitants of the Republic, except in the cases expressly provided for by law, and in the form which it designates.

153. No inhabitant of the Republic shall be compelled to take an oath relative to his own acts in criminal affairs.

154. The military and ecclesiastics will remain subject to the authority under which they actually are, according to the existing laws.

155. No suit can be instituted neither in civil or criminal cases for injuries, without being able to prove having legally attempted the means of conciliation.

156. None can be deprived of the right of terminating his differences, by means of arbitrators appointed by each party, whatever may be the situation of the controversy.

TITLE 8TH. SECTION 1ST. *Of the individual government of the States.*

157. The government of each State shall be divided for its exercise, in three powers, Legislative, Executive, and Judicial, and never can be united two or more of these in one corporation or person, nor the Legislature deposited in one individual.

158. The Legislative power of each State shall

reside in one Legislature, composed of the number of individuals, which their respective Constitutions may determine, to be elected popularly, and removable in the time and manner which said Constitution may designate.

159. The person or persons in whom the States confide their Executive power, cannot exercise it, except for a definite time, which shall be fixed by their respective Constitutions.

160. The Judicial power of each State shall be exercised by the tribunals that the Constitution may establish or designate, and all cases, civil or criminal, which appertain to the cognizance of those tribunals, shall be terminated in them to final judgment and execution.

SECTION 2ND. *Of the Obligations of the States.*

161. Each one of the States is obliged—First, to organise its interior government and administration, without opposing this Constitution, or the constitutional act. Second, to publish, by means of their Governors, their respective Constitutions, laws, and decrees. Third, to obey, and cause to be obeyed, the Constitution and general laws of the Union and treaties made, and those that henceforward may be made by the Supreme Authority of the Federation with any foreign powers. Fourth, to protect its inhabitants in the free use and liberty which they have to write, print, and publish their political ideas, without the necessity of license, revision, or approbation, previous to publication, always taking care to observe the general laws on the subject. Fifth, to deliver immediately the criminals of other

States to the authority which reclaims them. Sixth, to deliver the fugitives of other States to the person that justly reclaims them, or compel them in some other mode to satisfy the interested party. Seventh, to contribute for the consolidation and extinguishment of the debts acknowledged by the General Congress. Eighth, to remit annually, to each one of the Houses of Congress, a general circumstantial and comprehensive note of the ingress and egress in all the Treasuries they may have in their respective districts, with a relation of the origin of the one and the other, of the situation in which are found the branches of industry, agriculture, and manufactures of the new branches of industry, which they can introduce and extend, designating the means by which it can be obtained, and of their respective population and means of protecting and augmenting it. Ninth, to remit to both Houses, and in their recess, to the Council of Government, and likewise to the Supreme Executive Power, authorized copies of the Constitution, laws, and decrees.

SECTION 3D. *Restrictions of the Powers of the State.*

162. None of the States can—First, establish without the consent of the General Congress, any tonnage duty, nor other post duty. Second, impose without the consent of the General Congress, contributions or duties on importations or exportations, whilst the law does not regulate it, as it must do. Third, hold at any time a permanent troop, nor vessel of war, without the consent of the General Congress. Fourth, enter into any agreement or compact with any foreign power, nor

declare war against them; resisting, in case of actual invasion, or in such danger as will not admit of delay; giving immediate notice thereof to the President of the Republic. Fifth, enter into an agreement or compact with other States of the Federation, without the previous consent of the General Congress, or its posterior approbation, if the transaction was upon the regulation of limits.

TITLE 7TH. ONLY SECTION. *Of the observances, interpretation, and amendment of the Constitution, and Constitutional Act.*

163. Every public functionary, without exception to class, previous to entering upon the discharge of his duties, must take the oath to obey the Constitution, and Constitutional Act.

164. The Congress shall dictate all laws and decrees which they may deem necessary to render effective the responsibility of those who violate this Constitution, or the Constitutional Act.

165. The General Congress alone, can resolve doubts, which may occur about the meaning or understanding of the articles of this Constitution, and of the Constitutional Act.

166. The Legislatures of the States can make such observations as they may deem proper, about particular articles of this Constitution, and the Constitutional Act, but the General Congress will not take them into consideration, until the year 1830.

167. The Congress in that year shall confine itself to examining the observations that merit the deliberation of the next Congress, and this declaration they shall

communicate to the President, who shall publish and circulate them without any observations.

168. The following Congress in the first year of its ordinary sessions shall occupy themselves in examining these observations submitted to their deliberation, in order to make such amendments as may be deemed necessary, but the same Congress which makes the examination provided in the last article, cannot decree the amendments.

169. The amendments and additions that are proposed in the year following, the 30th shall be taken into consideration by the Congress in the second year of each biennial and if rendered necessary, in conformity with the provisions made in the preceding article, they shall publish this resolution in order that the next Congress may notice them.

170. In order to reform or amend this Constitution or Constitutional Act, shall be observed, besides the rules prescribed in the foregoing articles, all the requisites provided for the formation of laws, excepting the right to make observations granted to the President in article 106.

171. The articles of this Constitution and the Constitutional Act which establish the Liberty and Independence of the Mexican Nation, its Religion, form of Government, Liberty of the Press, and division of the Supreme Powers of the Federation and of the States, can never be reformed.

Given in Mexico, 4th October, 1824, fourth year of Independence, third of Liberty, and second of the Federation.

Signed by the members of Congress, and the Supreme Executive Power.

I hope that we shall long enjoy the blessings of that liberty which this Constitution promises us, and think we have no reason to doubt but we shall.

Affectionately yours, W. B. D.

LETTER XII.

San Antonio de Bexar, Feb. 2, 1829.

Dear Friend :— * * * * You requested me in your last letter, to give the names of the different Empresarios of Texas, and a history of the settlement of the colonies of Texas by the different Empresarios, as also their location. Were I to give you a full account of it, the subject might prove tedious to you, but the brief outline which I shall take great pleasure in sending you, will, I trust, prove not only interesting, but instructive.

In January, 1821, Moses Austin, of Missouri, received permission from the Supreme Government of the internal provinces of New Spain, to introduce a colony of three hundred families in the province of Texas. Before any steps had been taken to establish the colony, Austin died. His son, Stephen F. Austin, immediately took up the enterprise; he proceeded to Bexar, where he arranged the preliminaries with the Spanish authorities; and was commissioned by the Government to take charge of the local government of the new settlement until it could be otherwise arranged.

In December, 1821, he arrived at the Brazos with the first emigrants, and settled at the old La Bahia crossing.

During the interval between the date of his permission, and the time of his arrival, Mexico had shaken off the Spanish dominion, and it became necessary for him to proceed forthwith to Mexico.

After his arrival at that city, Iturbide was proclaimed Emperor of Mexico. This event determined him to remain, and accordingly he continued there till the passage of the colonization law of 1823, when after having secured the sanction of the government to his original project, he made preparations for returning to Texas. While hastening his preparations for departure, information reached the city of the movement of Santa Anna at Vera Cruz, and of the prospect of a counter revolution. Austin then determined to remain and await the event, which ended in the dethronement of Iturbide, and the establishment of the Federal Republic.

In April, 1823, the Supreme Executive Power issued a decree in virtue of an act of Congress confirming in full the accession granted to Austin by the Imperial Government, and a copy of said decree was delivered to Austin.

In August, 1823, Austin arrived at the colony accompanied by the Baron de Bastrop, who had been appointed by the Governor of Texas commissioner on the part of the Government to survey lands for the settlers, and in union with Austin, to issue titles to each in the name of the Government. Such arrangements as were necessary were made by the commissioner who then returned to Bexar, as a member of the deputation of Texas.

In 1824, the commissioner returned to the colony, and with Austin issued titles to the settlers for lands which had been surveyed up to that time, but being elected a member of the Legislature of the new State of Coahuila and Texas, he departed for Saltillo and left a part of the titles unfinished, which together with other unfinished business of the colony, was completed by Gaspar Flores, who was especially commissioned by the Government for that purpose.

Subsequently to November, 1824, Austin petitioned the Supreme Executive of the nation for permission to colonize two or three hundred families in addition to the number already colonized. This petition was referred to the authorities of the State. In the meantime Austin, under the apprehension that the State Colonization law was about to be sanctioned, forwarded a petition to the Governor of the State, repeating his petition to the Supreme Government. The petition was complied with and a contract dispatched for Austin to sign.

In April, 1825, having heard nothing of either petition, he forwarded a third to the Governor of the State asking for authority to colonize five hundred families. This was also complied with, and the contract for three hundred, which was forwarded in answer to his former petition, was altered to five hundred families, the whole to be settled within the limits of the old colony, which were defined to be that part of the country lying between the La Baca and San Jacinto rivers, south of the road leading from San Antonio de Bexar to Nacogdoches, and north of a line parallel to the sea shore, ten leagues distant therefrom.

On the 1st of April, 1826, Gaspar Flores was commissioned to issue titles to the five hundred additional families.

On the 20th of November, 1827, Austin entered into another contract with the State Government for the introduction of one hundred families into the country east of the Colorado river and north of the San Antonio road.

On the 29th of July, 1828, Austin contracted with the State Government to settle three hundred families within the reserved district on the coast known as the ten league reserve, being all that colony between the limits of the old colony and the sea shore. Both of these contracts were to be fulfilled within six years after the dates of the contracts.

The conditions on which Austin was permitted to colonize were the same as the several colonization laws of Mexico, with the exception of some unimportant municipal regulations.

Upon the passage of the colonization laws of Mexico and the State laws of Coahuila and Texas, the attention of many men of enterprise was directed to the example of Austin, and contracts were taken out for colonizing the whole surface of Texas. None of these were fulfilled, and no colonists were ever introduced into the most of them. But I will give you an abstract of those which were partially colonized.

On the 6th day of October, 1825, Green Dewitt contracted for the introduction of three hundred families into the district lying southwest of Austin's colony, and northwest of the ten league reserve on the coast. The western boundary of his territory was defined as running southwesterly from the intersection of the Coleto river, with the ten league line to the road leading from San Antonio to Nacogdoches, which road formed the northern boundary of said district. The eastern boundary was Austin's west line, and the southern was the ten league reserve.

On the 12th of January, 1826, Benjamin R. Milam contracted for the introduction of three hundred families into that district lying north of the San Antonio and Nacogdoches road, bounded on the west by the Guadalupe river, on the north by a line parallel to the San Antonio road and fifteen leagues distant from it, and on the east by the Colorado river.

On the 15th of April, 1825, Robert Leftrich contracted for the introduction of two hundred families into that district, bounded in the following manner: North by the Camanche road leading to Nacogdoches, east by the Navosota river, south by the San Antonio road, and west by the dividing ridge between the Colorado and Brazos rivers. After having been the subject of much controversy, this contract at length fell into the hands of the Nashville Company of Tennessee, by their agent, the Empresario Sterling C. Robertson; of this company Leftrich was originally the agent. No titles have been issued under any authority but theirs.

On the 21st day of December, 1826, Joseph Vehlein contracted to introduce three hundred families into that district, which lies south of the Bexar road, east of the twenty border leagues reserved, parallel to the course of the Sabine river, north of the ten border leagues reserved parallel to the course of the coast, and east of Austin's colony.

On the 14th of November, Joseph Vehlein contracted for the admission of one hundred families into that district lying between his first contract and the Gulf of Mexico.

David G. Burnet, on the 22nd of December, 1826, contracted for the colonization of three hundred families, within that district lying within the following bounds:—Running northwardly from the town of Nacogdoches and parallel to the west line of the twenty border leagues reserved, parallel to the Sabine river fifteen leagues, thence west to the Navosota river, down that river to the San Antonio road, and thence along that road to Nacogdoches. This contract was extended to two years after its expiration under the colonization laws.

On the 11th of June, 1829, James Powers contracted for the introduction of two hundred families within the country lying within the following limits:—Beginning on the west bank of the Coleto river, at a point ten leagues above the sea; thence running parallel with the coast to the Nueces river, at a point ten leagues above its mouth; thence down the Nueces to the shore; thence along the shore to the mouth of the Guadalupe river; thence up the river to the mouth of the Coleto; thence up the Coleto to the place of beginning.

On the 17th day of August, M'Mullen and M'Gloin contracted for the settlement of two hundred families into that district lying west of the ten border leagues reserved, bounded on the north by a line drawn from a point on said ten leagues line, ten leagues southwest of Goliad to the juncture of the San Antonio and Medina rivers, and by the Medina river west by the road from Bexas to Presidio de Rio Grande, and south by the Nueces river.

Don Martin de Leon, on the 6th day of October, 1825, contracted for the settlement of forty-one families, and, soon after, for one hundred and fifty families within that district lying between the Coleto and Guadalupe rivers on the one hand, the La Baca river on the other, and between the sea shore and a line parallel thereto ten leagues distant.

By the terms of the colonization law, all the titles issued by the Empresarios, whose contracts are quoted above, are good to the holders.

Since I last wrote you,* I have returned from my tour in Mexico, and been into the settlements on the Colorado and Brazos. I found every thing there quiet and peaceful. Nothing of any note has transpired during my absence. Many new settlers have arrived within the last four years, and every thing seems prosperous and flourishing. Indeed the colonies seem in a happier state than they have ever been before. At present, the prospects seem very favorable for continued prosperity.

I am now living in San Antonio which place I like very much. I hope you will soon make your arrangements to come to this country, as I think things are now in such a settled state that you can live here in peace and enjoyment.

---

* The first part of this letter contained intelligence of a private nature which has been purposely omitted.

Affectionately yours,

W. B. D.

LETTER XIII.

Colorado River, Texas, Jan. 2, 1830.

Dear Friend:—Soon after I last wrote you, I left San Antonio and again moved into the colony. I built me a little log cabin on the west bank of the Colorado, about thirty miles below the old La Bahia road, and ten above the Atoskosieta road. After I had got my cabin erected, and before I was prepared to settle permanently, it was necessary for me to take a trip to Bexar, in order to settle up my business, and bring out goods.

My wife having nothing to occupy herself with during my absence, and being very fond of traveling, as well as very brave, desired to accompany me. I told her she knew it was very dangerous for one or two to travel by themselves, and as there was no opportunity to have company, she had best remain at home. But she replied, that is the reason I wish to go; if you should be in danger, I would rather be with you than at home, as I shall be constantly imagining you in danger, and you know a person when thinking of danger, is inclined to magnify it, and think it worse than it really is. It was at last decided for her to accompany me. On the first night after leaving home, we encamped on the La Baca. In the morning, after having rode a few miles, we met a company of men among whom was Col. Groos. He appeared surprised to see us traveling alone, and inquired of us if we were aware of what had happened during the past night. I replied in the negative. He then told us that Mr. Milburn and company had been robbed, when about fourteen miles east of the Guadalupe, that their clothing had been torn off from them, after which they had been set at liberty. None were killed, and they succeeded in reaching Gonzales just before day. He insisted on our turning back; this we declined doing. We reached Gonsales about noon. Soon after having crossed the Guadalupe river, we met another party of men, who told us that two nights previous, Roark and his company had been murdered on the road from La Bahia to San Antonio. These also advised us to return, but I informed them I thought this the safest time for traveling, as the Indians, through fear of the whites, would immediately leave that part of the country, and there would be no cause of fear for the next two or three weeks.

We encamped that night a short distance from the road, half way between Gonzales and Bexar. A short time after midnight, we were awakened by the trampling of hoofs, which seemed to be coming in the direction of our encampment. We listened! the sounds grew more distinct! Was it a cavyyard of horses, running in the prairie, or was it a party of Indians coming upon us? And how should we escape, were questions which rapidly suggested themselves to our minds. They advanced nearer, and yet more near; what must we do? to attempt to fly is vain. At length we secreted ourselves, as well as we could, behind a Musquit tree; the night was dark, and we knew our enemy could not see us till they were close upon us. They came up, the sight of our fire seemed to frighten them, and separated the company. I now crept cautiously from my place of concealment to see who was our foe. To my great relief I found it to be a vast herd of buffaloes. Our horses had been frightened by their coming, and one of them which was tied had broken his fastenings and gone with the buffaloes, followed by the other, although hobbled. We were now left in a sad situation, being thirty-five miles from any settlement, and without a horse. But there was no time for inactivity. I shouldered my gun, and set out in pursuit of the fugitive horses. Happily for us, I soon found them about a half a mile distant from our encampment. I now returned with them to the place where I had left my wife. We then decided to start on, and reach San Antonio as soon as possible in the morning, and rest ourselves where we might feel in perfect safety.

After having settled up my business to my satisfaction, we started on our return home. We found a gentleman by the name of Bates, was going in on to the Colorado, and we made our arrangements to travel in company. We traveled on very pleasantly, meeting with no adventures till we got to the La Baca. Here we met a party of movers just on green from the States. They inquired of us whence we were from, where we were going, &c. We told them we were from Bexar and going to the

Colorado. They now informed us we were in great danger; they said that on crossing Rocky creek, about fifteen miles from us, they had stopped awhile to rest, and found a bee tree where the bees went in about three feet from the ground. They cut out a block in the tree large enough to get the honey. They had just got the block out and were about to get the honey, when one of the party gave the alarm of Indians. They looked and beheld a party of fifteen or twenty Indians, upon this they all fled and had arrived thus far safely. They said, moreover, that they considered our situation a perilous one; but we knowing that we were obliged to proceed, thanked them for their information and went on. On arriving at Rocky creek we stopped, found the bee tree which our Missouri friends had told us of, and prepared ourselves to take the honey. We agreed that I should watch for the Indians, who, we feared, might be lurking, while Bates took the honey from the tree. Naturally enough I cast my eyes in the direction in which the Missourians told us they had seen them, and there I beheld—not a party of Indians, but the trunks of a clump of live oaks, about the height of a full grown Indian; the tops of these trunks were burned black, and the bark had loosened and dropped off, and there they stood with their red bodies and black heads, presenting to an inexperienced eye very much the same appearance as a party of Indians. Having learned what the Indians were that so much alarmed the Missourians, we gathered the honey and came home very much amused with the incident.

During the past summer there have been constant depredations committed on the frontier settlements by the Indians. Strolling parties have been constantly coming in, killing stock, and robbing the settlers, and then leaving before they could be discovered and punished. This has troubled us exceedingly. At last we heard that a party of the Whacos and Towaconies had encamped during the summer at the mouth of the San Saba river, for the purpose of raising a crop of corn. A call was now made for a hundred volunteers, which were raised in the course of two or three days. Abner Kirkendall was elected Captain. We obtained the services of two pilots, a Mexican and an Indian, who knew the route to the mouth of the San Saba river, and also where the Indians were encamped. We now set out, traveling up the east bank sixty or seventy miles, we then struck out taking the dividing ridge between the Colorado and Brazos rivers, crossing the Yegua, Brushy and Little rivers, we then traveled up on the bank of Little river to the mountains of the Colorado. For several days we continued our course through the mountains, till our guides informed us they thought we were within thirty miles of the Indian encampments. Here we halted for a couple of days and sent our guides with two men to accompany them, to search and spy out the situation of the Indian camps. On the second day they returned and brought information that we were about twenty miles from the Indian encampments, that they had spied it out and had found a crossing to the river; they also gave it as their opinion that we could get to the Indian village in a night. We remained where we then were till dark, when we set out for the Indian village with the expectation of arriving and attacking the Indians before day. The night was very dark, and our course lay over mountains of rock and through cedar brake, which so impeded our course and bewildered our guides, that at daylight we found ourselves near the Colorado river, and ignorant of our distance from the Indian village.

Here was a deep ravine running down between the mountains, and hid from the eye of the Indians by lofty trees, which towered their heads in grandeur towards the deep blue heavens above. Rocky hills lay on either side of the ravine, and by their overhanging cliffs promised a safe and secure hiding place from the savages, should they be near where we were. Into this ravine we went with our horses; we tied our horses to the trees and secreted ourselves, determining to remain here till night closed in upon us, and then make our way to the Indian encampment, and commence an attack. We now sent out four men to find the village, as we did not know how far we were from it. They had been gone about half an hour when they were surrounded by forty Indians well mounted and completely armed and equipped. They surrounded our men without firing upon them; finding they seemed intent on going in a certain direction, the Indians formed a sort of half circle around them, leaving open the side towards which they were traveling. Knowing that they would not be there by themselves, but must belong to some party, the Indians followed them, thinking to fall upon our encampment and do us more injury than they could by killing our men.

The spies came on, followed by the savages till they reached a cliff which overhung our place of concealment; they then raised a cry; we mounted our horses in an instant and rode up the bank. The Indians knowing as soon as our men hallooed that they were on the encampment, instantly turned their horses' heads and retreated. We pursued; but now their company separates and each one now takes a course of his own; being aware that we should no longer be safe in concealment, we kept on to the crossing of the Colorado. Immediately on crossing we beheld about three hundred yards above us the Indian village. But the Indians who had followed our spies, had arrived before us and given the alarm; all were flying from the town. We now received orders to ride in quickly and fire. We obeyed; but only succeeded in killing one man; the rest were soon hid from our view by the thick cedar brake, and we feared pursuit would be useless; for our horses' feet were completely worn out, and would not, we thought, be able to follow. One gentleman, Bartlett Simms, said he thought his horse would be able to go on, and if others would accompany him, he would pursue; fifteen of us now joined and we pressed on after them. We passed a great many women and children, but as we did not wish to hurt these, we still kept on in pursuit of the men. We pushed so close upon them that they were obliged to leave the pack horses they were leading, which we took as we returned.

We followed on after the Indians till we came to a perpendicular cliff about five hundred feet high, extending out from the river about six miles, and from which we could find no possible way of descent. Before us lay a beautiful valley, along the side of which ran the river; as far as the eye could reach was one extended plain covered with verdure and beautiful flowers, and over it were riding numerous Indians driving cavyyards of horses. On the left hand of the valley rose a mountain to the height of five hundred feet covered with tall cedar trees. Never in my life have I seen so beautiful a landscape. A painter might convey to your mind an idea of its loveliness, but I cannot. On our right ran the clear waters of our own dear Colorado, before us lay the beautiful valley, and on our left towered the high mountain of rock, covered with trees forever green and beautiful. I lingered unwilling to depart, viewing from my elevated position the lovely landscape which nature had spread out before me.

Finding it impossible to follow the Indians further, we returned to the town where we had left our companions. As our frontiers are ever exposed to the fury of the Indians, we determined to set them an example of not injuring the women and children, or burning their houses. We remained in the village three days, recruiting ourselves and our horses, as we found plenty of corn, meat, and beans. We sent across the river for some of our friends, who had been taken sick and left behind at the ravine, and brought them into town. There were, in the village, one hundred and seventy-two wigwams; making a calculation from the number that usually live in a wigwam, there were a thousand inhabitants living in this village.

On leaving, we carried with us what buffalo robes and deer skins we wanted, besides brass kettles, packsaddles, beans, and seventy or eighty horses and mules. We traveled together one day, when we decided to separate, on account of the scarcity of game. We now divided into small companies, each company taking a different route. In the company which I was in, there were five or six of us. Our provisions soon gave out, and as the game had been killed off and driven out of the country, by the Indians and hunters, we suffered greatly for food. We lived for three days on acorns and persimmons. One day when we had fasted for some hours, we came across a beautiful persimmon grove, which looked to us as though there were a large quantity of persimmons to be found in it. We quickly dismounted, hitched our horses, and went into the grove for persimmons. We found there were but few of them ripe; we went through the grove gathering the fruit, and on our return to the place where we had entered the grove, we found a young Englishman who was in our company had climbed a tree, and eaten the persimmons as he found them, ripe or green; (by the way, a green persimmon is one of the most disagreeable fruits in the world, to the mouth, drawing it up worse than alum:) our poor Englishman really thought he was poisoned; he tried to speak, but, alas, he could not open his mouth. We, knowing the cause of his distress, could not help laughing, though we really pitied him.

I must tell you another amusing anecdote about our Englishman. The creeks in the prairie, at this season of the year, are generally dry, with the exception of now and then a deep pool, by the side of which the tall, waving grass grows thick. We had been traveling for some length of time without finding water, and our horses were suffering with thirst, when we chanced to descry one of these pools. The Englishman thought he would have the first chance at the water, and so put spurs to his horse, and rode hastily on. On his arrival at the pool, both horse and rider were lost sight of for a moment. Instantly, the horse came out from the pool without rider or saddle; but our friend soon managed to get out himself. We now came up, and got a long pole with a hook attached to it, and finally succeeded in getting his saddle for him.

At last, after a toilsome ride of thirty-two days, we arrived at our homes in safety.

I am your true friend,
W. B. D.

LETTER XIV.

Colorado river, *Texas*,
November 29, 1830.

Dear Friend:—A long time since, you desired me to give you a more general description of our delightful land than I have ever yet done. I have now spent a good deal of time in traveling over Texas, have seen the greater part of the country, am, perhaps, as well qualified to give you a description of it at the present time, as I shall ever be.

The State of Coahuila and Texas lies between the twenty-fifth and thirty-fourth parallels of latitude, and is bounded on the north by Red river which separates it from the territories of the United States, east by the Sabine, by which river it is separated from Louisiana, on the South by the Gulf of Mexico, and on the west by the other Mexican States.

Texas has been divided by nature into three distinct divisions. The first or level division extends from the coast back seventy miles; the second is moderately uneven, though not hilly, and extends from the Brazos river to the northern and eastern boundaries of Texas above the level district. West of this district, above the level portion, is the mountainous country.

Upon the coast and in the vicinity thereof, the surface of the country is very level and very free from swamps and marshes, with a rich deep alluvial soil. This region extends from the coast for seventy miles into the interior. The land is capable of yielding cotton, sugar, and other southern productions in great abundance; and, indeed, where such have been raised, they have proved to be of the finest quality. The climate here is very healthy; the only diseases peculiar to the climate are bilious diseases; nor are these universal or very severe. They readily yield to judicious treatment, and by proper care and attention to diet and exposure they may be avoided.

Above this region commences a surface which is peculiar to the greater part of our country, usually known by the name of "rolling prairie." The soil is not so rich as in the former portion, though it is of an excellent quality. The water is pure and healthy, and the water courses clear and rapid. The atmosphere becomes purer than in the lower country. Here is a desirable place to live; there is no local cause for disease; the land is sufficiently rich to support a dense population, and the facilities for farming are unrivaled. Most kinds of grain grow luxuriantly; it is not a very good fruit country, though, I think, were sufficient pains taken, fruit might be raised to a considerable extent. The winters are so mild as to render it unnecessary to take any further care of cattle and other stock than herding and branding the increase during the whole year.

The northwestern and western portion of Texas is mountainous and broken to within one hundred and fifty or two hundred miles of the coast. The valleys are rich and covered with high waving grass, the mountains high, and abounding in every variety of mineral productions. Here abound the finest streams of clear crystal water bounding over deep cascades and rolling on in great rapidity through a country of unrivaled beauty. This region, in its beautiful and romantic scenery, cannot be surpassed by those of which poets have sung and novelists have dreamed. The streams, as they flow from the mountains, are singularly clear, and afford the finest drink in the world.

It is a remarkable feature of Texas, and a universal one, that the greater part of the timber is immediately upon the water courses. Nearly every stream is surrounded with an abundant quantity of timber, while the intervals between the streams are mostly prairie land interspersed with beautiful groves, and having, at a distance, the appearance of a cultivated park. In the eastern portion of the country, where the streams are more frequent than in the western, the timber is more plentiful; but even there it is uncommon for the forests skirting two contiguous streams to interlock.

The rivers of Texas run in independence of each other and in a parallel course, and thus indicate Texas to be a vast inclined plain, with a slope to the southeast. Many of them are broad, deep, and capable of being navigated.

Texas embraces almost every variety of soil and climate. Among the mountains is a cold, bleak region, where roam vast herds of cattle and wild horses, and inhabited by fierce Indians. As you descend from the mountainous to the prairie country, you find yourself in a warm, healthy, and delightful climate. Upon the seashore the country is not so healthy, but warm and pleasant. Many kinds of tropical fruits grow here.

In June, two men, a Mr. Alexander, and son, were killed on the Wilburger trace, near where it crossed the old La Bahia road, by the Indians. These men had a load of dry goods and groceries, which they were carrying to Bastrop, their place of residence. The Indians robbed the wagon of what dry goods, and as much tobacco as they wanted, and left the place. A party was then formed who pursued the Indians up the country, on to the west bank of Little river, and, finally, after having lost their trail, followed on in the direction of the main branch of Little river, fifty miles above the falls of the Brazos. An Indian of the Caddo tribe was taken prisoner by a lad named Barry, and driven into camp. He told the Americans that his camp was some five miles distant, that there were two other Caddo men, two Cherokees, and two squaws there. With him for their guide, they went to the camp, took the men prisoners and executed them. Not having been present myself, at this time, I am unable to give you any further particulars; what I have already given I learned by way of a friend who was there.

Did I mention to you in my last, the terrible circumstance of DeShay's murdering Earle? I do not recollect mentioning it, and as he was a son of a former Governor of Kentucky, it will be interesting to you. Some time while I was living in San Antonio, and not long before I left, there came to my house a young man, calling himself by the name of Parker. He was a fine looking man, and seemed to have a good deal of money about him. He spent most of his time in gambling with the Mexicans, losing a great deal of money. He always appeared very uneasy and restless; he was an excellent musician, and would frequently take up his violin, striking up the most melodious strain, and when in the midst of it, throw down his violin and hurry out of the house. There was one thing remarkable about him; he could not speak above his breath. I asked him the cause of this; he informed me that he had a bad cold, and a cold always affected him in that way, and frequently for some weeks.

When he had been with me a few weeks, it so chanced that business called me into the settlements on the Colorado. There inquiries were made of me, if I had seen a person answering the description of Parker. I gave them information that I had, and he was then at my house in Bexar. I then learned that his real name was DeShay; that he had committed murder in Kentucky, been tried and condemned there; but his father being Governor, had pardoned him, and he had been set at liberty. While in prison, he had made an attempt to cut his throat, but did not cut sufficiently deep to cause his death. He had, however, cut into his wind pipe, into which the physicians had inserted a silver tube, and this was the cause of his speaking in so strange a manner. After being set at liberty in Kentucky, he traveled to New Orleans; here he fell in company with a young man by the name of Earle, a son of the Governor of Georgia. Earle was coming to Texas; DeShay proposed to accompany him. They landed in Texas together, and DeShay still desired to remain in Earle's company. Earle now purchased a horse which they rode by turns. Earle's horse and saddle had been found on Peach Creek, but no tidings had been heard of him, and it was suspected he had been murdered by DeShay for his money, as he was known to have a good deal about him. A party was immediately formed who went directly to Bexar, arrested DeShay, and brought him in to San Felipe de Austin. Inquiries were made of him concerning Earle; he stated that they had traveled together to Peach Creek, that they had there parted company, and Earle had gone down the coast intending to return to the States. Not being satisfied with this testimony, Webber, Osborne, and myself were sent to make search for Earle. At length we found the body of a man, which we knew must be Earle, sunk in Peach Creek, his head having been cut off. We took up the body, buried it, and returned with the information. DeShay was tried, condemned, and sentenced to be executed; but before the day on which he was to have been executed had arrived, his weary spirit took its flight from its tenement of clay. Sad, indeed, must be the feelings of his honored father, to learn that the son whom he had fondly cherished in the merry, gleesome days of his childhood, has brought dishonor upon his hoary head. I fear that the son who should have supported the declining years of a worthy father, will bring down his gray hairs in sorrow to a premature grave. And oh! the anguish of his affectionate mother, if she still lives, it is beyond the power of a human being to conceive, when she hears that the son whom she had watched over, and fondly cherished in the days of his innocence, has ended his days as a murderer, despised and shunned by every one in a gloomy prison, in a foreign land.

I am your affectionate friend.

W. B. D.

LETTER XV.

Colorada River, Texas,
November 6, 1831.

Dear Friend:—You mentioned in your last that you wished me to give you a description of the manners and customs of the people of this country. We have all sorts of manners and customs drawn from all nations!

Here is a receptacle for people from all parts of the earth! Every one who is driven from all other places flies to this country as a city of refuge. We are here all united together. There is no jar or contention in politics, as all of us are obliged to take the oath of allegiance to help the Constitution of the country. We, the old settlers, are bound together by an indissoluble tie; we have fought and bled together, we have suffered together for want of food and clothing, and now we begin to enjoy the blessings of peace, and to see happiness smiling upon us.

It would amuse you very much could you hear the manner in which the people of this new country address each other. It is nothing uncommon for us to inquire of a man why he ran away from the States! but few persons feel insulted by such a question. They generally answer for some crime or other which they have committed; if they deny having committed any crime, and say they did not run away, they are generally looked upon rather suspiciously. Those who come into the country at the present time, frequently tell us, rough, ragged, old settlers, who have worn out our clothes and our constitutions in the service of the country, that they have a great deal of wealth in the States which they are going on after as soon as they find a situation to suit them. But we not relishing this would-be aristocracy generally manage to play some good joke on them in return.

One day there were quite a number of these aristocrats who seem to think themselves better than those who are worn out by toil and hardships, seated at the dinner table in a sort of tavern kept by a man named William Pettis, or Buck Pettis, as he was always called, at San Felipe; these persons were boasting largely of their wealth, their land, their negroes, the ships they had at sea, &c. There was at the table an old man by the name of Macfarlane, a don't care sort of a fellow, who had married a Mexican wife, and was living on the Brazos when we first came to the country. He listened to them quietly for a while; at length he could restrain himself no longer. Well, gentlemen, he said, I too once commenced telling that I had left a large property in the States, and, in fact, gentlemen, I told the story so often, that at length I really believed it true, and eventually started to go for it. Well, I traveled on very happily till I reached the Sabine river, which separates this country from the United States. On its bank I paused, and now for the first time began to ask myself seriously, what am I doing! Why am I here! I have no property in the States, and if I had if I cross the river 'tis at the risk of my life, for I was obliged to flee to this country to escape the punishment of the laws. I had better return and live in safety as I have done. I did so, gentlemen, and since then have been contented without telling of the wealth I left in the States. The relation of this story so exasperated those for whose benefit it was told, that they fell upon the old gentleman, and would have done him injury had it not been for the interference of his friends. This, however, put a stop to long yarns.

You desired me to tell you in what manner we spend our idle hours. In doing this I shall tell you how a good many spend most of their time, our country being so rich as to require but little time to till the ground. This is an excellent country for game and fish. On the coast we find beds of oysters, fishes of various kinds, and all manner of fowls. Up the country our rivers abound with various kinds of fish, such as cat, buffalo, perch, and gaspergoos. Out in the smaller streams, trout may be found in great abundance. In hunting and fishing we are able to while away many an idle hour. We frequently make up parties of men, women, and children, and start out on a hunting or fishing expedition, and are gone for several days. These excursions are very pleasant, as we are able to find plenty of honey, kill game, catch fish, and amuse ourselves in looking at our beautiful country, our clear water courses, and in contemplation of the future, for as the past has been full of bitterness, we of course look forward to future happiness, since our land is so well calculated to be a land of ease and luxury.

The people of this country seem to have forgotten that there is such a commandment as "Remember the Sabbath day and keep it holy." This day is generally spent in visiting, driving stock, and breaking mustangs. There is no such thing as attending church, since no religion except the Roman Catholic is tolerated, and we have no priests among us. Indeed, I have not heard a sermon since I left Kentucky, except at a camp-meeting in Arkansas.

You wrote me that you wished to know something about the mustangs and wild horses of our prairies, and how we catch them. These horses are quite small, but some of them very handsome and of great service when taken and gentled. They are found in great abundance all over our prairies. We catch them at times, by running them with fleet horses and roping them, but as we are liable in this manner to get those which are most sluggish in their movements, we find the most successful way to be to go out where there is a large cavyyard or drove, find some crossing of a creek which they frequent, make pens, and then drive them into these. In this manner we are able to get the finest, and turn the others loose to roam over the prairies.

As many of our friends in the States, are about removing to this country, I have decided to send you an extract of a copy of the Colonization laws, which may prove of some use to you or your friends.

During Stephen F. Austin's stay in Mexico, in the reign of the Emperor Iturbide, a general Colonization law was passed and promulgated on the fourth day of January, 1823.

The following are all the essential provisions of the Colonization law:

ARTICLE 1. The government of the Mexican nation will protect the liberty, property, and civil rights of all foreigners who profess the Roman Catholic Apostolic Religion, the established religion of the empire.

ART. 2. To facilitate their establishment, the Executive will distribute lands to them, under the conditions and terms herein expressed.

ART. 3. The Empresarios by whom is understood, those who introduce at least two hundred families, shall previously contract with the Executive, and inform it what branch of industry they propose to follow, the property or resources they intend to introduce for that purpose, and any other particulars they may deem necessary, in order that with this necessary information, the Executive may designate the province to which they must direct themselves, the lands which they can occupy with right of property, and the other circumstances which may be considered necessary.

ART. 4. Families who emigrate not included in the contract, shall immediately present themselves to the Ayuntamiento of the place where they wish to settle, in order that this body in conformity with the instructions of the Executive, may designate the lands corresponding to them, agreeably to the industry which they may establish.

ART. 5. The measurement of lands shall be the following: establishing the vara at three geometrical feet; a straight line of five thousand varas shall be a league, a square each of whose sides shall be one league, shall be called a sitio; and this shall be the unity of counting one, two, or more sitios; five sitios shall compose one hacienda.

ART. 6. In the distribution made by government of lands to the colonists, for the formation of villages, towns, cities, and provinces, a distinction shall be made between grazing lands, destined for the raising of stock, and lands suitable for farming or planting, on account of the facility of irrigation.

ART. 7. One labor shall be composed of one million square varas, that is to say, one thousand square varas on each side, which measurement shall be the unity for counting one two or more labors. These labors can be divided into halves and quarters, but not less.

Art. 8. To the colonists whose occupation is farming, there cannot be given less than one labor, and those whose occupation is stock raising, there cannot be given less than one sitio.

Art. 19. To each Empresario who introduces and establishes families in any of the provinces designated for colonization, there shall be granted at the rate of three haciendas and two labors for each two hundred families so introduced by him; but he will lose the right of property over said lands, should he not have populated and cultivated them in twelve years from the date of the concession. The premium cannot exceed nine haciendas and six labors whatever may be the number of families he introduces.

Art. 20. At the end of twenty years, the proprietors of the lands acquired in virtue of the foregoing articles must aleniate two-thirds part of said lands, either by sale, donation, or in any other manner he pleases. The law authorizes him to hold in full property and dominion, one-third part.

Art. 23. If, after two years from the date of the concession, the colonists should not have cultivated his land, the right of property shall be considered as renounced; in which case, the respective Ayuntamientos can grant it to another.

Art. 29. Every individual shall be free to leave the empire, and can alienate the lands over which he may have acquired the right of property, agreeably to the tenor of this law; and he can, likewise, take away from the country all his property, by paying the duties established by law.

Your affectionate friend,

W. B. D.

LETTER XVI.

Colorado river, Texas,
December 1*st*, 1832.

Dear Friend:—You have, perhaps, heard before this of the danger of war which at this time threatens our beloved land. But I do not suppose that you know the true cause and circumstances connected with this melancholy event. Mexico has been for a long time slightly encroaching upon us, in a manner which we, as native Americans, could scarcely endure. All of the Mexican States, save Texas, are in a sort of a state of servility. Mexico, perhaps being moved partly by jealousy and partly by fear of our increasing strength, has made an attempt to bring us more fully under subjection. Step by step she has slowly and stealthily taken, striving at the same time, to draw the cap over our eyes that we might not be aware of her intentions while she riveted the chains of slavery about us. Her movements, although guarded, have yet been apparent to us, and we have watched them with an interest which nothing but an ardent love of liberty could create. Still we would gladly believe her motives kind, her professions sincere, did we not too plainly see the chain with which she is ready to bind us, if she can succeed in lulling our fears and blinding our eyes.

The crisis, I fear, has already arrived! The goal is passed and we can never look upon Mexico again as we have heretofore done! Her last act was one which we cannot forget; the attempt to oppress us was too evident for the sons of a boasted land of liberty to endure.

Some time in the spring of this year Mexico, under the pretence of protecting the country, sent on troops which were stationed at Velasco, Anahuac, and Nacogdoches. Under Col. Ugartechea at Velasco one thousand, under Col. Bradburn at Anahuac seven hundred, and Col. Piedras at Nacogdoches thirteen hundred. All these towns were now fortified. On the 15th May Col. Bradburn proclaimed martial law, and forbade all American emigration. Some of our citizens had gone down to Anahuac on business of their own, while there three of them, Barret Travis, Patrick Jacks, and Monroe Edwards, were taken up under some trivial pretence, put in irons, and cast into calaboose. As soon as this became known, one hundred men armed themselves and, under the command of Francis W. Johnson, marched to Anahuac. On arriving at that place the Texan troops put to flight seven hundred Mexicans, who were at the quartel or barracks, and took the barracks. Of these they kept possession for three days! At the end of this time Col. Bradburn, with true Irish craft, offered to make a treaty with the Texans and surrender the place the next day, if Johnson would withdraw his men one mile from town. With this proposition Johnson complied! He left the quartel and encamped a mile from town as he had agreed to do. The quartel of which he had had possession had an upper story where Bradburn had stored away all his ammunition. Being busy in guarding the place our men had not noticed this. Immediately on the quartel being left unguarded, Col. Bradburn sent down and had his ammunition carried up to town, and in place of making a treaty, commenced a strong cannonade upon Johnson's men. Seeing nothing could be done without cannon in making an attempt to take the town, Johnson now withdrew his men to a proper distance from the town, which he blockaded, cutting off the Mexican communication with the surrounding country, aiming in this manner to starve them out. For three weeks he kept the place blockaded! At this time Col. Piedrass, the Commander at Nacogdoches, started with thirteen hundred men to reinforce Bradburn. Seventeen brave Texans laid in ambush at the first creek which they were to cross, and fired upon them. This the seventeen continued to do at every stream, till at last the Mexicans thought the whole country was in arms, and surrendered their arms to the seventeen brave lads. On hearing of the surrender of Piedrass, Col. Ugartechea started from Velasco to reinforce Bradburn. Being aware of Ugartechea's movement, Johnson sent a company of men down to Galveston Island, who there captured Ugartechea's men with all the government stores. On the 19th of June, Bradburn made his escape and fled to the States. The garrison at Anahuac then surrendered themselves prisoners of war.

It now became evident to the minds of most of our citizens that if this state of things were permitted to continue, that it would eventually prove our destruction. We knew that Mexico had the power, and we could but suppose if we rebelled against her that she would have the disposition, to crush us at once. We doubted not but she would come in and drive us from our happy homes, for the protection of which we toiled and labored for years. We saw our wives and children would be left without a roof to shelter them, unless something was done to quell this spirit of rebellion. Our Ayuntamiento had declared to the Government that this was not the wish of the people, but the giving way to passion of a mere handful of men. This body now met, and in the following manner called upon us as Mexican citizens to come forward and support its assertion.

To the Citizens, Inhabitants, and Residents of Austin's Colony.

FELLOW CITIZENS:—Little did we apprehend that, as members of the Ayuntamiento, under the the enjoyment of those suffrages which you with calmness and the free exercise of your judgment, were pleased to extend towards us, and with which you confided to us the management and government of your local interests, that it would ever become our duty to call upon you to declare in the most solemn and determined manner, not by words but by acts, your adhesion and your fidelity to the Mexican Government, its Constitution, and its laws. But unfortunately and unhappily for us all, that duty is now imposed and required at our hands, and the time has arrived when the Government must know positively and unequivocally, who are its subjects, who obey its laws, and who claim its protection. Shall it be said that North Americans transplanted upon another soil degenerate? Shall it be said they no longer listen to the high-minded dictates of honor and principle but as it degenerates from one clime, they, in another, give a loose rein to unbridled passions and illegal and unjustifiable proceedings? We, your legal representatives have dared to declare that such is not the character, such are not the feelings of the mass who we represent. Now the time has come when we are compelled to call on you to support us in our declaration and prove to the Government that we are not deceived in you, and that they have not been deceived in us all.

Hatred and revenge, the strongest passions that occupy the human heart, stimulated a number of our citizens to take upon themselves a redress of injuries committed by the military commander of Anahuac on some residents of the country not belonging to the colony, and having no other tie and no other claim on the citizens of this colony, than that the same land gave us birth; and further, for alleged outrages on the Constitution and laws of the country we have adopted we admit wrong has been committed. But what course does our Constitution point out for redress of wrongs, private or public? the answer of all must be the supreme constitutional authorities of the country. Was any such appeal made? unhappily for us all, and, unhappily for the prospects of our delightful country, in which some have passed days and nights of toil and fatigue to provide food for their families, none has been made. But a beginning has been made at the precise point where all redress should end. More than ten years have rolled into the endless shade of time that will be no more since your first experienced the privations of settling a wilderness.

Will you permit an act of desperation and imprudence in your fellow citizens to erase from your mind and recollections the scenes of toil and suffering of 1821, 22, and 23? Will you or can you forget the beneficent bounties and benefits of that God, of that nation that admitted and encouraged your settlement? Are you ready and willing to permit that your countrymen, your friends, even your kindred shall hurl defiance at the Government, and destruction on your families? Or will you unite as one man and use those exertions which honorable and high-minded feeling suggest, and cause a return to their homes and to their duties of our unfortunate and misguided fellow citizens? A crisis has now arrived! all must be up and a doing! Government calls upon us! It is our duty to obey the call! acts and not words are now wanting, and the only way for us to convince the Government that we are not directly opposed to it is now for every man to be found attentive to its call and ready at his post.

And by all being united we may yet ward off the evil that threatens not only those who unfortunately are in arms, but ourselves—because if the Government be convinced that we are in rebellion, ere harvest time, this our delightful country will be filled with troops; let us ward off this evil; let us for a while quit our homes, and by our promptness convince the Government that we are faithful, and by this we will do much to serve our brethren who are erroneously in arms. 'Tis said of old that one just man saved Nineveh, and it may be equally true, that the mass of the colony by uniting and adhering to the Government may save all the rest.

A general call is made! All! all are wanted!—and it is better to sacrifice a little than to jeopardize all. On Saturday, the 7th of July, a general meeting will be held at this place, and all who can, should come. The Ayuntamiento had a meeting to-day, at which the chief of this department presided, he is our friend, and we must not lose his friendship by lukewarm and pusilanimous conduct. We must be men, and think and act as men.

A resolution was adopted by the Ayuntamiento, a copy of which accompanies this address. Let your movements be prompt and rapid, and join and unite with us, heart and hand to save the colony and our fellow citizens from impending ruin, and let our children have the happiness in after ages of the country, of looking upon their forefathers as among the men who, in 1832, saved the country from the terrible effects of anarchy and confusion, and the destruction which both threatened it with. We are respectfully,

Your fellow citizens,

H. Chrisman, *Alcalde*,

Sam. W. Williams, *Sec'ry*.

The people all with one consent obeyed this call, and on the 7th of July, a meeting was held at San Felipe de Austin. We there decided the course adopted by our brethren to be rebellion against the Government, which we had sworn to protect, and that immediate steps must be taken to quell the spirit of rebellion! We determined to send the Government troops to Matamoras, partly by land and partly by sea. The flag of liberty was raised, and we declared ourselves in favor of Santa Anna and the Constitution of 1824.

I fear the only good resulting from this, will be to put off the evil day. I do not think the Mexicans will ever be satisfied to see us thriving and prospering. They seem to fear, that we shall some day become too strong for them, and they wish to bind us while they are able. But I will endeavor to hope for better things, and think that Mexico will not again encroach upon our rights.

Affectionately, your friend,

W. B. D.

LETTER XVII.

Colorado River, Texas,
October 31, 1834.

Dear Friend:—Since I last wrote you, all has been tolerably quiet in Texas, though we have been constantly expecting some new form of oppression to appear to us. The United States of Mexico have been constantly revolutionizing during the past two years. One State after another has been brought under oppression, and we are expecting our time will soon come. We feel little like doing anything, not knowing one day what the next will bring forth. When we lay our heads upon our pillows at night, we know not but we shall be called upon before morning to yield up our arms. All is uncertainty! all is doubt. Sometimes the party in favor of the Constitution of 1824, has been uppermost, and sometimes the one in favor of a Central Government. Though all has been quiet here it has been that stillness which precedes a storm. We have seen the war clouds gathering thickly around us, and know that they will soon break in fury upon our heads. But the storm will not come unexpected! we are prepared for it and shall be ready to meet it! We still cling to the Constitution of 1824, and if the other party keep the rule, as there is now no doubt it will, we shall not long remain in the enjoyment of peace.

Some time in the last year, we elected Stephen F. Austin, Senator to the Congress of Mexico, and sent him to the city of Mexico, Tyran being at that time President of the Republic. Soon after Austin arrived in that country, Santa Anna succeeded in putting down Tyran and took the Presidential chair, at the same time declaring himself in favor of a Central Government, which was immediately formed. Austin, our Senator, had sustained Santa Anna and the Constitution of 1824, and when the fickle President changed his views, he still retained his former opinion in direct opposition to Santa Anna, and for this he was taken up and cast into prison.

Santa Anna now sent troops to those States which still continued in favor of the Constitution of 1824, beginning with Zacatecas and disarmed them one by one.

On receiving information of Austin's imprisonment, and that the ambitious Santa Anna had disarmed all the Mexican States, our own excepted, and was ruling as Dictator, our fears greatly increased. We immediately gathered together, and tried to think of some way, by which we might liberate Austin. Many ways were proposed, discussed, and then laid aside as impracticable. We decided at one time, to send two or three men to Mexico, with a petition for his release; if we failed in this manner to effect his liberation, we thought we would send on an armed force and release him in that way. How we shall get him out of prison is as yet unknown to us, but we are determined to free him, if at the risk of our lives. Austin is bound to us by many and strong ties, and we cannot bear that he should suffer in prison. He is our empresario, the one who settled us here; a friend whom we have looked to for counsel in war and in peace. He has cared for us, as a father cares for his children; he has endured with us trials, privations, and hardships! He has shown a deep interest in our welfare, has rejoiced in the season of our prosperity, and befriended us in adversity, and we are determined he shall be free; that he shall not long be an inmate of a Mexican prison, if any means in our power can prevent it. We do not fear Santa Anna; we expect soon to be called upon by him, to yield up our arms. But this we will never do! If the worst comes upon us, I do not doubt that the other Mexican States which Santa Anna has disarmed, will come forward and join us, when they see that we are determined to cling to the old Constitution.

I told you that now all was peace and tranquility, but do not think I mean by this entire, uninterrupted peace! but to us, who have always been in commotion from the time when we first settled here, and in daily expectation of something worse, it seems like peace. We are, in our minds, like the briny deep, when the tempest is for a short time hushed; compared with the time when the tempest was raging fiercely and wildly, all is quiet, but still its deep bosom heaves, its waves toss about, billows roll up and break their white crested heads; the waters are troubled and restless; above hangs a dark cloud more fearful than the first, which threatens at every moment to break upon the weary mariner with all its fury. So is Texas at the present time. The first storm of Mexican wrath is lulled; but the Indians, who have ever been our enemies, still continue to annoy us. They are constantly coming in from every side and committing depredations. The Cherokees have lately received a grant of land on the north of us, from the Mexican government. Then the Whacos and Towaconies are residing above us, the Camanches west of us, and the Lapuns whom the Mexicans can send in at any time to annoy, dwell upon our frontier. Were it not for the constant expectation of something far more dreadful, we should consider the incursions of these savage tribes, as no small molestation. But they seldom come in and give us battle; they will fall upon small parties of men, and kill them, and also steal our horses and cattle. Indeed, such a thing as being free from the molestations of Indians, has never been known in the history of Texas, and doubtless, will not be known for many years to come.

A short time since, a few of our young men started to go up to the head waters of the Colorado and Brazos rivers to examine a large rock of metal, which has for many years been considered a wonder. It is supposed to be platinum. The Indians have held it sacred for centuries, and go there once a year to worship it. They will not permit any white person to approach it. It is very large, and stands isolated in a plain. It is almost impossible to make any impression upon it with chisel or hammers. When struck, it gives forth a clear, ringing sound, which can be heard for miles around. A gentleman by the name of Brown, from Missouri, thought from the information he had obtained from some old hunters, that he could find it; so he and Mr. Thomas Jamison made up a party and set out in search of it. They succeeded in finding it, but were unable to break off any specimens of it to bring home. On their way home, the Indians discovered them, and mistrusting that they had visited the rock, attacked them, killed some, and took one prisoner; the others made their escape, and after many days of toil and fatigue, succeeded in reaching home. The one who was taken prisoner, was afterwards brought by the Indians into the frontier settlements on the Brazos, and there sold to the settlers. Frequently women and children who have been captured by the Indians have been taken into the frontier settlements of the United States, and there sold; and thus, after a long time, they get restored to their friends.

Your affectionate friend,

W. B. D.

LETTER XVIII.

Columbus, Colorado County, Texas,
December 25, 1835.

DEAR FRIEND:—You will undoubtedly feel somewhat surprised to see this letter dated at Columbus; but, my dear friend, wonders will come. For a long time I have lived in a remote part of Austin county, and quite a distance from any town, and I have for this reason, never dated letters at any other place than Colorado river. But as settlers are constantly coming in and locating on the Colorado and Brazos rivers, a petition was made during the past summer to the Ayuntamiento to divide the county. This petition was granted. The county of Colorado lies on both sides of the Colorado river, in one of the richest and most fertile tracts of land in Texas. A town has been located and laid out on the west bank of the river for a county seat, and named Columbus. It is beautifully situated in the bend of the river, or rather nearly out of the bend. From the site of the town across to the other end of the bend, it is eight hundred yards, and around it by the river it is thirteen miles. The town lot itself is a beautiful grove of live oaks. It bluffs on to the river, which flows on in a clear and rapid course to the bay of Matagorda. The town is situated about seventy-five miles from the bay, just above the level portion of Texas, and hardly in the rolling portion. On the opposite bank of the river rises a dense forest of timber, which, in the summer season, will render the situation of our town very romantic. No building has as yet been commenced, on account of the unsettled state of the country. But if I live to see Texas thriving and prosperous again, and in a peaceful state, I shall also trust to see Columbus a flourishing town. The Colorado is a stream capable of being navigated as high up as this place, and as the country around is exceedingly rich and fertile, Columbus will no doubt some time be a place of considerable importance.

When I last wrote you, I told you that although all was then quiet, we were daily expecting a rupture. We have since realized all that we then feared. The Mexican Government for a long time detained Austin in prison and continued to encroach upon our rights and liberties, 1835 until at last, in September of this year, an armed force arrived on the Gaudalupe river, opposite Gonzales, to demand our arms. They first demanded of us a cannon which the Mexican Government had loaned us to protect the frontier settlements. The citizens of Gonzales replied to them that the Alcalde, Mr. Ezekiel Williams, was at that time from home, that they could not give up the cannon without his permission, but if they would remain where they then were till his return, he would give them an answer. To this they agreed! A runner was immediately despatched to the Colorado with the news. A number of men instantly started from this settlement for Gonzales, at which place we arrived on the third day after the Mexican army arrived. We found quite a number of Texans had reached the place before us, and under the command of Cols. J. W. E. Wallace and John H. Moore, had commenced drilling and making preparations for battle. The people of Gonzales kept the Mexican army quiet for three days by telling them the Alcalde had not returned. On the morning of the fourth day they informed the Mexican commander that the Alcalde had arrived and decided not to give up the cannon, if they wished it they must fight for it. The Mexican officer made answer, that they would not leave without the cannon, and we had better give it up, for they intended to have it.

During the following night all our army crossed the river, taking the cannon with us, and drew up as near as possible to the Mexicans, being secreted by the timber. Here we lay till morning! At daybreak on the morning of the second of October, we had our men arranged, and sent out a flag for the purpose of holding a conversation with the Mexican officer. Cols. Wallace and Moore went out with an interpreter to converse with him; the interpreter informed him that we were in favor of the Constitution of 1824, that we should not give up the cannon, that if he would like he could join us and hold his command in the army, or if he did not wish to do that, he must return without the cannon, or take it by force of arms. The Mexican made answer, that he was himself in favor of the Constitution of 1824, but he was sent there by command of the Central Government, and it would be as much as his life was worth to fight for the Constitution of 1824, and he should not return without the cannon. Upon this our officers bade him good morning, and returned immediately to the army. We were instantly ordered

Oct
1835

to fire upon the Mexicans! this we did, putting them to flight. We then re-crossed the river to Gonzales. At that place we remained five or six days, constantly receiving reinforcements from the country. While in Gonzales we were much cheered and gladdened by the return of our Senator, Stephen F. Austin, who had made his escape from prison. During our stay in Gonzales, there was a battle fought between the Mexicans and Texans at La Bahia, in which the Texans were victorious and took the town. Just before attacking the Fort at Goliad (La Bahia), as the Texans were marching down the San Antonio river, from the upper to the lower crossing of the same, about midnight, they unexpectedly came upon Benjamin R. Milam, who had lately been a prisoner in Mexico. Col. Milam readily joined the Texans, and was the foremost to enter the enemy's quarters. This gentleman has for a number of years been a resident of Mexico, and of late has been confined as a prisoner in that country. He at last by some means succeeded in escaping from prison and got into Texas. He knew nothing of the revolution in Texas, until informed of it by the soldiers by whom he was discovered.

Goliad

Preparations were instantly made for the war, which we felt was already upon us. While we were busy in Gonzales preparing for more active exertions in the tented field, the Camanche Indians came down with a considerable force near the town and committed some depredations. Col. Burleson went out with a party of soldiers, attacked the Indians, took one of them prisoner and brought him into camp. After having received reinforcements, and listened to several speeches from Rev. Dr. Smith, Robert Williamson, and Cols. Wallace and Moore, on the subject of war, we elected Stephen F. Austin, Colonel, and John H. Moore, Lieutenant Colonel, besides other officers, and took up our line of march for Bexar. We encamped on the Salado: the day after our arrival at that place, Gen. Burleson and Col. Wallace went up to the powder house with seventy-five men; they were there met by the Mexican cavalry with whom they had a slight skirmish; no lives were lost.

A few days after this, a part of the Texan army commanded by Cols. Fannin and Bowie, marched over on the San Antonio river, below the town, to the mission Conception, where they were met by a large body of the Mexican force; the engagement was very severe; when the battle was over one hundred and four of the Mexicans lay stretched in death on the bloody field; on the part of the Texans but one, the brave and well beloved Richard Andrews, was killed. Andrews received a mortal wound from a grape shot in the early part of the action, which cut him nearly half in two. He instantly placed his hands over the wound, and, turning to his companion in arms, said, "I am a dead man, but don't let the boys know it; tell them to fight bravely." Having said this he laid himself down and immediately expired.

The next day after the battle of the Conceptions, we marched up to the head waters of the San Antonio river, about two miles above the town, and there encamped. While we were encamped there our men had several skirmishes with the Mexicans though none of them proved serious. Our Commander, Col. Austin, now told us that business of importance compelled him to resign ~~his~~ commission and return to his colony. His resignation was accepted, though with sincere regret, and Col. Edward Burleson was elected in his place. Skirmishes were now frequent, and some of them very severe; among these was the grass fight; several of the Mexicans were killed and a few of the Texans; quite a number were wounded on both sides. A brisk cannonade was kept up both by Mexicans and Texans. At length Col. Burleson came to the conclusion that he would force his way into town. This he did in the night. We entered the town on the morning of the fifth of December and took possession of the Veramendi house, and the north part of the town in which the Veramendi house is situated. Our riflemen were now so situated that they could fire upon the Mexicans as they came up to their cannon; so they did us but little injury, and, at length we got possession of a part of their cannon. Soon after we came into the town, on the tenth day of the month, the Mexicans surrendered the town and army to the Texans. The Mexican army was permitted to retire from town and take away all their munitions of war, on condition that they would never fight against any of the Texan forces any more.

Dec
1835

It gives me pain to mention that the brave and noble hearted Col. Milam was killed at the taking of San Antonio, by receiving a musket ball in his head. A great many of the Mexicans were killed; The Texans sustained a loss of comparatively few in number.

The army elected Barret Travis, Lieutenant Colonel Commandant, and after leaving him in possession of a part of the army, the rest dispersed to their homes. Col. Travis with Cols. Crockett and Bowie now fortified themselves in the Alamo for the purpose of keeping possession of the town.

Our army owe many thanks to the brave inhabitants of San Antonio, who, although native Mexicans, still ranked themselves on the side of liberty, and fought bravely with the Texan forces. Were all the Mexicans such ardent lovers of liberty as the citizens of San Antonio, we should not now be left to fight our battles alone. A gloomy future lays spread out before us. We know not what success will attend our arms. We are but a mere handful of men to fight against a powerful nation. But we are determined that we will not submit to the will of a tyrant. Born and bred in a boasted land of freedom, where the bright sun of liberty ever sheds his benignant rays full upon us, we cannot, we will not bow beneath the scepter of a despot. We will be free or lose our lives in fighting for our freedom.

Truly yours,

W. B. D.

LETTER XIX.

Columbus, Texas,
May 15, 1836.

DEAR FRIEND:—Happy, indeed, ought I to be in being permitted once more to address you. Since I have seen you, long years have passed away, and Time has brought upon me carking cares. I little dreamed when I last stood by your side and received from you a parting blessing, that it would be my lot to pass through so many and such varied changes. How little do we know what is before us. My path has been through storms and strife ever since I first landed in Texas. While young in years, Texas has been cast upon her own resources. Sixteen years ago there was no white settlement in this beautiful country. Now we have freed ourselves from the rod of oppression and established our own independence.

In October of last year each jurisdiction selected two delegates to be sent to San Felipe de Austin for the purpose of advising ways and means for the safety of Texas and the prosecution of the war. These delegates apointed a General Council, who selected Henry Smith Governor, and James W. Robinson Lieutenant Governor, of Texas. The Governor and Council formed, what was termed, the Provisional Government of Texas, which was established Nov. 13, 1835. The first act of any importance passed by the Provisional Government was the suspension of the functions of all

Land Commissioners, Empresaries, Surveyors, and all persons concerned in the location of land.

But now comes a period of painful interest in the history of our beloved land; this was truly a "time that tried men's souls." We had not only the Mexicans to contend with, but now, as if to humble us, and lead us to not put confidence in ourselves, there was a rupture broke out between our own people, whom it should seem, ought to cling to each other with a stronger tenacity, now that we are oppressed and at war with those who ought to protect us. The Council appointed a committee called the Vigilance of Safety to act for the Council. In November funds to the amount of five hundred dollars were received from Tennessee for the use of the army. The committee resolved that this money should be appropriated to the payment of the members of the Council, while the Governor determined it to be for the purpose for which it was intended. This and some other differences caused the Governor to make a communication to the Council, which so exasperated that body, that the committee to whom the communication was referred made report as follows:

To the Honorable, the General Council for the Provisional Government of Texas:

Your Special Committee to whom was referred the communication of Governor Smith, report,

That they are unable to express any other views to the House than indignation at language so repulsive to every moral feeling of an honorable man, and astonishment that this community could have been so miserably deceived in selecting for the high office of Governor a man whose language and conduct prove his early habits of association to have been vulgar and depraved, and his present disposition that of a disorganizer and a tyrant: that they repel the infamous charges preferred against the Council and its members as false and unfounded in every part, and condemn the style and language as low, blackguardly, and vindictive, and in every way unworthy of and disgraceful to the officer whence it emanated, and as an outrageous libel on the body to whom it was addressed; and therefore advise the return of the paper, accompanied by the following resolutions:—

1st. Resolved, that the members of the General Council are the immediate representatives of the sovereign people and are charged with the safety of the country and amenable only to the people for the faithful discharge of their duties.

2nd. Resolved, that each member individually and as a body collectively will sustain, at all hazards, the dignity of this Government, and the rights of the good citizens of Texas whom they have the honor to represent.

3rd. Resolved, That Henry Smith, Governor of the Provisional Government of Texas, be ordered, forthwith, to cease all the functions of his office, and be held to answer to the General Council upon certain charges and specifications preferred against him, agreeably to the provisions of the 4th section of the Organic Law of the Provisional Government of Texas, as adopted in Convention on the 13th of November, A. D., 1835, and that a copy of said charges and specifications be furnished to the Governor, Henry Smith, within twenty-four hours from this time.

4TH. Resolved, That the Secretary of the Executive be forthwith notified of these resolutions and that he be held responsible to the General Council of the Provisional Government of Texas for every and all records, documents, and archives of his office.

5TH. Resolved, That the Treasurer, Commanding General, foreign agents, and all other officers of this Government, be notified of the suspension of Henry Smith of the powers and functions of Governor by the representatives of the people of Texas in General Council assembled, and that they and every one of them hold themselves respectively subject to the orders and directions of the Lieutenant Governor as acting Governor and to the General Council aforesaid.

6TH. Resolved, That a committee be appointed to draft an address to the people of Texas, setting forth the circumstances and the reasons which compel the Representatives in General Council to adopt these measures.

Read and unanimously adopted, Jan. 11th. 1836.

R. R. ROYALL, *Chairman*,
ALEXANDER THOMSON,
CLARBORNE WEST,
J. D. CLEMENTS,
JOHN M'MULLIN.

To give you a further idea of what the committee were doing, I will send you a copy of the following resolutions:—

To the Honorable the General Council of the Provisional Government of Texas.

Your Committee to whom was recommitted the resolutions of the committee on military affairs, contemplating the appointment of J. W. Fannin Jr. and F. M. Johnson as agents clothed with certain powers for collecting and concentrating volunteer troops for carrying into effect the intended plan of operations in the descent upon Matamoras, as designed by the Provisional Government of Texas, in consequence of Mr. Johnson declining to act as agent, for reasons submitted by himself and entirely satisfactory to this Council, your Committee report for the consideration of this House the following resolutions.

1st. Be it resolved by the General Council of the Provisional Government of Texas, that J. W. Fannin, Jr. be and is hereby appointed and empowered as an agent for and in behalf of the Provisional Government of Texas, to raise, collect and concentrate at or as near the Port of Copano as convenience and safety will admit, all volunteer troops willing to enter into an expedition against Matamoras, wherever they may be found; at the mouth of the Brazos, city of Bexar, or elsewhere; whether in Texas or arriving in Texas; and when thus collected and concentrated, to report either to the Commanding General or to the Governor and Council as he may prefer, agreeably to the 7th section of an ordinance and decree, passed on the fifth December, 1835, for raising an auxiliary corps to the regular army; and continue to report from time to time as the expedition may progress.

2ND. Be it further resolved by the authority aforesaid, that the said agent, J. W. Fannin, Jr., be and is hereby authorised and empowered to call upon Thomas H. McKinney, the general agent, storekeeper, or supplying officer of the Government, for the proper and necessary munitions of war, the usual supply of provisions apportioned to number and rank, and the means of transportation thereof, and of the troops aforesaid, and said agent's receipts shall be respected by the Government.

3RD. Be it further resolved by the authority aforesaid, that the said agent, J. W. Fannin, Jr., be and is hereby authorized and empowered to negotiate a loan of three thousand dollars, at not more than ten per cent. interest, to be paid out of the first moneys or the first money, which shall come into the treasury of Texas, not otherwise especially appropriated at this date.

4TH. Be it further resolved by the authority aforesaid, that, on the concentration of the volunteer troops as aforesaid, an election for commander and other officers, shall be made agreeably to the law regulating the auxiliary and volunteer corps, as referred to in section first of these resolutions.

5TH. Be it further resolved by the authority aforesaid, that after the agent of the Government aforesaid, J. W. Fannin, Jr., shall have raised, collected, and concentrated the said volunteer troops, that he shall make a descent upon Matamoras, if he deems it practicable to take said place, or such other point or place as the said agent may deem proper.

6TH. Be it further resolved by the authority aforesaid, that the aforesaid agent, J. W. Fannin, Jr., shall be authorised and empowered to appoint such special agent or agents under him as he shall deem necessary to carry into effect the object of these resolutions, and to delegate to such special agent or agents such powers in writing, as he may think proper and not inconsistent with the powers of his own agency.

7TH. Be it further resolved by the authority aforesaid, that J. W. Fannin, Jr., shall be furnished with a copy of the foregoing report and resolutions duly certified, immediately upon their passage.

Read, amended, and adopted, January 7th, 1836.

Resolved, That all public printers of the Provisional Government be notified, not to print or publish any more documents of any description upon the credit of said Government after the 11th instant, coming in any way from Henry Smith, the late Governor, as no accounts for such printing will be acknowledged by the General Council, and that James W. Robinson, now the acting Governor, will be the executive medium of communication, and ordered that the printer be required to print this resolution.

Passed by the General Council of the Provisional Government of Texas at San Felipe de Austin.

JOHN M'MULLIN,
President pro tem. of the General Council.
EDW. B. WOOD, *Sec'ry pro tem., &c.*
January 13th, 1836.

In order that you may get some idea of the charges, as preferred against Governor Smith, by the General Council, I will send you an extract of the address drafted by the committee to the people of Texas, setting forth their reasons for adopting such measures as they did against his Excellency.

TO THE PEOPLE OF TEXAS.

When, in the execution of delegated powers, the representatives of a sovereign people are urged to the necessity of adopting harsh measures to protect the interests of their country and save her from anarchy, it becomes their duty to their constituents, to explain to them the circumstances under which they have acted, and the inefficiency of a milder course. Under these considerations and a full sense of the high responsibility resting upon them, the representatives of the people of Texas in General Council assembled, chosen and delegated to guard her rights and interests in her present embarrassed and critical situation, are painfully compelled to disclose to their constituents, and to the world, occurrences as unlooked for as they are to be deplored and regretted. In a government like ours, formed in the present emergencies, hastily organized, and at a time when confusion and disorder prevailed throughout our oppressed land, it could not be expected that perfect harmony and concord would characterize all the acts of all its departments, or entire satisfaction could be given by all its legislations; but it was at least to have been hoped, and the hope was fondly cherished by the members of this Council, as well as by all patriots, that by mutual compromises and a general spirit of concession, the present necessities of our beloved country, could be answered. All immediate self interest we endeavored to discard, all private ambition and individual jealousies to sacrifice on the altar of our country, and unite in fraternal council to promote and advance the general weal. That this department of the Government has so far succeeded in their adherence to their principles, we appeal to our public acts, and to all who have witnessed our deliberations. When complaints have been made to us of our acts, we have endeavored calmly and considerately to revise our conduct, and correct, so far as we are able, all errors and inconsistencies. With the other department of the Provisional Government, we have endeavored to co-operate in the same spirit of concession, and allowance for all errors and misconceptions, and to avert the present lamentable state of affairs, has been our constant and unremitting care; but unfortunately for the country, it was not to be prevented. From the very organization of the Government, we have witnessed with the deepest regret and most painful apprehensions, the disposition of that department to abridge the powers of the General Council, which were designed as a check upon usurpation, and to assume to itself the provinces of both departments. The Executive has from time to time communicated his advice to the Council, which it has always received with that deference due to the office from which it came, and has maturely weighed and deliberated upon the same. But when the Council has adopted the measures recommended by him in his message, he has withheld or delayed his signature to their ordinances, or neglected to comply with their requisitions, at other times he has transcended all authority violating the organic law, formed and enacted by the people's own immediate representatives, in General Council assembled, and the Republican principles of the Constitution of 1824, which he has solemnly sworn to support, and has imputed to the Council the evils resulting from his own acts. He has assumed the right of appointing and commissioning, and has so appointed and commissioned, private individuals to take the command of armies, without the consent or advice of the Council, and in direct violation and contradiction of the organic law of the convention to which he owes his official existence.

After the reduction of Bexar the volunteer troops being idle within our boundary, numbers daily crossing in to our assistance from the United States of the North, and the country not affording the means of supporting them; it was thought advisable by the Council, and the Government so advised them, to keep the war without our territories, and to have the volunteers actively and profitably employed. For that purpose the Council authorized Col. J. W. Fannin, jr., to enlist volunteers, hold an election of officers; and the army when raised and organized, to make a descent upon Matamoras, specifying the manner and prescribing the limits of Col. Fannin's action as the agent for the Government for that special purpose; for which they received from the Governor, the vilest and most uncouth anathema, couched in the most vulgarly abusive language, charging them with appointing a generalissimo with plenary powers to conduct a plundering and marauding expedition, and wishing them to join with a piratical co-operation; while he himself, without the *advice*, *consent*, or *knowledge* of the Council, and plainly and palpably in violation of the organic law, which he is unequivocally sworn to obey, had just given to James Bowie, not known to the Government as an officer of any rank whatever, orders through the Commander in Chief to raise an army, and proceed against Matamoras; thus endeavoring, by misrepresentations and false charges against the Council, to excite public indignation against them, and divert, if possible, their attention from his own headlong and lawless course, trampling law under his feet, disregarding his official oath, and breaking up the foundations of Government.

He charges the Council with joining with the expedition against Matamoras a *piratical* co-operation. By this he means the purchase of the schooner Invincible, and the appointing of Thomas F. McKinny, (whose patriotism he highly commends in his message to the Council,) to the command for the purpose of attacking and taking, if possible, the "Montezuma," a Mexican vessel now in Galveston, which has been cruising about our coast to annoy and capture vessels coming into our ports, and intercept the importation into Texas of men, munitions of war, and supplies for our armies. It was for the purpose of capturing, if possible, this vessel, and for the further purpose of protecting our commerce and obstructing that of the enemy, that the Council authorized the purchase and equipment for service of the schooner Invincible; a measure recommended by Gov. Smith, in his communications to the Council.

All these acts of stubborness and perverseness were not sufficient to gratify his thirst for sole dominion and arbitrary sway of the land. His dignity was insulted at the idea of the existence of a co-ordinate branch of the Government to curb his acts and check his usurpation. He became more and more restless until enraged at the presumption of the Council, in the exercise of a constitutional right, and in conformity with the true interests of the country, to pass an ordinance and decree by a constitutional majority after it had been vetoed by "His Excellency"—he ignites—his fury in a blaze consumed his prudence (what he had), he orders the Council to disperse, shuts the doors of communication between the two departments and proclaims himself the *Government*."

Such are the charges which the committee of the General Council brought against our Governor, and for which they attempted to put him out of office. In this attempt they failed. I will not pretend to justify Governor Smith fully, though I think the proceedings of the General Council against him unjust. Governor Smith is an exceedingly gentlemanly person, and one who always appeared to me to have the good of his country at heart.

The Consultation had decreed on the 11th December, 1835, a bounty of six hundred and forty acres of land to each volunteer, which bounty they increased on the 15th of December, by the addition of one hundred and sixty acres. This bounty is to be given to the heirs or legal representatives of the volunteer in case of his death in the service.

The several counties now held meetings to discuss whether we should hold to the Constitution of 1824, or declare our independence as a nation. It was at length decided to instruct the Consultation which had adjourned from San Felipe de Austin to meet at Washington the first day of March, 1836, to make a declaration of Independence, and frame a new Constitution for the Republic of Texas. On the second day of March our Independence was declared by the delegates assembled at Washington, and a few days after a new Constitution was formed. A copy of the Declaration of Independence I will send you, hoping it may prove interesting to you.

UNANIMOUS DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE

By the people of Texas, in General Convention, at the town of Washington, on the second day of March, 1836.

When a government has ceased to protect the lives, liberty, and property of the people from whom its legitimate powers are derived, and for the advancement of whose happiness it was instituted; and so far from being a guarantee for their inestimable and inalienable rights, becomes an instrument in the hands of evil rulers for their oppression. When the Federal Republican Constitution of their country, which they have sworn to support, no longer has a substantial existence, and the whole nature of their Government has been forcibly changed, without their consent, from a restricted Federative Republic composed of Sovereign States to a consolidated Central Military despotism, in which every interest is disregarded but that of the army and priesthood, both the eternal enemies of civil liberty, the ever ready minions of power, and the usual instruments of tyrants. When long after the spirit of the constitution has departed, moderation is at length so far lost by those in power, that even the semblance of freedom is removed, and the forms themselves of the Constitution discontinued, and so far from their petitions and remonstrances being regarded, the agents who bear them are thrown into dungeons, and mercenary armies sent forth to force a new government upon them at the point of the bayonet.

When, in consequence of such acts of malfeasance and abduction on the part of the Government, anarchy prevails, and civil society is dissolved into its original elements, in such a crisis, the first law of nature, the right of preservation, and the inherent and inalienable right of the people to appeal to first principles and take their political affairs into their own hands in extreme cases, enjoins it as a right towards themselves and as a sacred obligation to their posterity, to abolish such Government and create another in its stead, calculated to rescue them from impending dangers, and to secure their welfare and happiness.

Nations as well as individuals are amenable for their acts to the public opinion of mankind. A statement of a part of our grievances is therefore submitted to an impartial world in justification of the hazardous but unavoidable step now taken of severing our political connection with the Mexican people, and assuming an independent attitude among the nations of the earth.

The Mexican Government by its colonization laws invited and induced the Anglo-American population of Texas to colonize its wilderness under the pledged faith of a written Constitution, that they should continue to enjoy that constitutional liberty and republican form of Government to which they had been habituated in the land of their birth, the United States of America.

In this expectation they have been cruelly disappointed, inasmuch as the Mexican nation has acquiesced in the late changes made in the Government by General Antonio Lopez Santa Anna, who, having overturned the Constitution of his country, now offers, as the cruel alternative, either to abandon our homes, acquired by so many privations, or submit to the most intolerable of all tyranny, the combined despotism of the sword and the priesthood.

It hath sacrificed our welfare to the State of Coahuila, by which our interests have been continually depressed, through a zealous and partial course of legislation, carried on at a far distant seat of Government by a hostile majority in an unknown tongue, and this, too, notwithstanding we have petitioned in the humblest terms, for the establishment of a separate State Government, and have, in accordance with the provisions of the National Constitution, presented to the General Congress a Republican Constitution, which was without just cause contemptuously rejected.

It incarcerated in a dungeon for a long time one of our citizens, for no other cause but a zealous endeavor to procure the acceptance of our Constitution and the establishment of a State Government.

It has failed and refused to secure on a firm basis the right of trial by jury, that palladium of civil liberty, and only safe guarantee for the life, liberty, and property of the citizens.

It has failed to establish any public system of education, although possessed of almost boundless resources, (the public domain,) and although it is an axiom in political science that unless a people are educated and enlightened, it is idle to expect the continuance of civil liberty or the capacity for self government.

It has suffered the military commandants stationed among us to exercise arbitrary acts of oppression and tyranny, thus trampling upon the most sacred rights of the citizens, and rendering the military superior to the civil power.

It has dissolved, by force of arms, the State Congress of Coahuila and Texas, and obliged our representatives to fly for their lives from the seat of Government, thus depriving us of the fundamental political right of representation.

It has demanded the surrender of a number of our citizens, and ordered military detachments to seize and carry them into the interior for trial, in contempt of the civil authorities and in defiance of the laws and the Constitution.

It has made piratical attacks upon our commerce by commissioning foreign desperadoes, and authorizing them to seize our vessels and convey the property of our citizens to far distant ports for confiscation.

It denies us the right of worshipping the Almighty, according to the dictates of our own conscience, by the support of a National Religion calculated to promote the temporal interests of its human functionaries rather than the glory of the true and living God.

It has demanded us to deliver up our arms which are essential to our defence;—the rightful property of freemen, and formidable only to tyrannical governments.

It has invaded our country both by sea and by land, with the intent to lay waste our territory and drive us from our homes; and has now a large mercenary army advancing to carry on against us a war of extermination.

It has, through its emissaries, incited the merciless savages with the tomahawk and scalping-knife, to massacre the inhabitants of our defenceless frontiers.

It has been during the whole time of our connection with it the contemptible sport and victim of successive military revolutions, and hath continually exhibited every characteristic of a weak, corrupt, and tyrannical Government.

These and other grievances were patiently borne by the people of Texas until they reached that point at which forbearance ceases to be a virtue. We then took up arms in defence of the National Constitution. We appealed to our Mexican brethren for assistance: our appeal has been made in vain; though months have elapsed, no sympathetic response has yet been heard from the interior. We are, therefore, forced to the melancholy conclusion, that the Mexican people have acquiesced in the destruction of their liberty and the substitution therefor of a military government; that they are unfit to be free and are incapable of self-government.

The necessity of self-preservation therefore decrees an eternal political separation.

We, therefore, the Delegates with plenary powers of the people of Texas in solemn Convention assembled, appealing to a candid world for the necessities of our condition, do hereby resolve and declare that our political connection with the Mexican Nation has forever ended, and that the people of Texas do now constitute a *free*, *sovereign*, and *independent Republic*, and are fully invested with all the rights and attributes which properly belong to independent nations; and conscious of the rectitude of our intentions, we fearlessly and confidently commit the issue to the decision of the Supreme Arbiter of the destinies of nations.

RICHARD ELLIS, *President.*

Austin.

C. B. Stewart,
Thomas Barnett.

Brazoria.

Jas. Collinsworth,
Edwin Waller,
Asa Brigham,
J. S. D. Byrom.

Bexar.

Francisco Ruis,
Antonio Navaro,
Jesse D. Badgette.

Colorado.

William D. Lacy,
William Menefee.

Sabine.

James Gaines,
W. Clark, Jr.

Gonzales.

John Fisher,
Matt. Caldwell.

Goliad.

William Motlez.

Harrisburg.

L. D. Zavala.

Jasper.

Stephen H. Everett.
George W. Smith.

Jackson.

Elijah Stapp.

Jefferson.

Clairborne West, William B. Scates.

Liberty.

M. B. Menard, A. B. Hardin.

Matagordas.

Bailey Hardiman.

Mina.

J. W. Bunton, Thos. J. Gaseley,
R. M. Coleman.

Nacogdoches.

Robert Potter, Thomas Rusk,
Chas. S. Taylor, John S. Roberts.

Red River.

Robert Hamilton, Collin McKinnee,
Abb. W. Latimer.

San Augustine.

Austin Parmer, E. O. Legrand,
Stephen W. Blount.

Shelby.

Syd. O. Pennington, W. Car'l Crawford.

Refugio.

James Power, Sam. Houston,
David Thomas, Edward Conrad.

San Patricio.

John Turner.

Washington.

B. Briggs Goodrich, G. W. Barnett,
James G. Swisher. Jesse Grimes.

During the meeting of the Convention the delegates elected David G. Burnett to fill the Presidential chair until another could be elected by the people. General Sam. Houston was also appointed Commanding General of all the Texan forces.

Before the business of the Convention was entirely completed, news arrived that the garrison at Bexar was besieged by an army of Mexicans commanded by Santa Anna in person. The following letter from the brave Commander of the forces at the Alamo serves to exhibit the state of the garrison at San Antonio, and the spirit which animated them in this dark and critical hour, and in the desperate condition in which they were placed.

TO THE CITIZENS OF TEXAS.

Commandancy of the Alamo,
Bexar, February 24, 1836.

Fellow-Citizens:—I am besieged by a thousand or more of the Mexicans under Santa Anna. I have sustained a continual bombardment and cannonade for twenty-four hours, and have not lost one man. The enemy have demanded a surrender at discretion, otherwise the garrison is to be put to the sword, if the fort is taken. I have answered the demand with a cannon shot, and our flag still waves proudly from the walls. *I shall never surrender nor retreat:* then I call on you, in the name of liberty, of patriotism, and of every thing dear to the American character, to come to our aid, with all possible despatch. The enemy are receiving reinforcements daily, and will, no doubt, increase to three or four thousand in four or five days. Though this call may be neglected, I am determined to sustain myself as long as possible, and die like a soldier who never forgets what is due to his own honor, and that of his country. *Victory or Death!*

W. Barret Travis,
Lieutenant-Colonel Commandant.

P. S. The Lord is on our side. When the enemy appeared in sight, we had not three bushels of corn; we have since found in deserted houses eighty or ninety bushels, and got into the walls twenty or thirty head of beeves.
T.

Immediately on the receipt of the foregoing express at San Felipe de Austin, the Governor, Henry Smith, issued the following call:

"TEXAS EXPECTS EVERY MAN TO DO HIS DUTY."

Executive Department of Texas.

Fellow-Citizens of Texas:—The enemy are upon us! A strong force surrounds the walls of San Antonio, and threatens that garrison with the sword. Our country imperiously demands the service of every patriotic arm, and longer to continue in a state of *apathy* will be *criminal.* Citizens of Texas, descendants of Washington, awake! arouse yourselves!! The question is now to be decided are we to continue as freemen, or bow beneath the rod of military despotism. Shall we, without a struggle, sacrifice our fortunes, our lives, and our liberties, or shall we imitate the example of our forefathers, and hurl destruction on the heads of our oppressors? The eyes of the world are upon us! All friends of liberty and of the rights of man are anxious spectators of our conflict; or duly enlisted in our cause. Shall we disappoint their hopes and expectations? No! let us at once fly to our arms, march to the battle-field, meet the foe, and give renewed evidence to the world that the arms of freemen uplifted in defence of their rights and liberties are irresistible. "Now is the day, and now is the hour," that Texas expects every man to do his duty. Let us show ourselves worthy to be free, and *we shall be* free. Our brethren of the United States have, with a generosity and a devotion to liberty unparalleled in the annals of men, offered us every assistance. We have arms, ammunition, clothing, and provisons; all we have to do, is to sustain ourselves for the present. Rest assured that succors will not permit the chains of slavery to be riveted upon us.

Fellow-Citizens,—Your garrison at San Antonio is surrounded by more than twenty times their number. Will you see them perish by the hands of a mercenary soldiery, without an effort for their relief? They cannot sustain the siege more than thirty days; for the sake of humanity, before that time give them succor. Citizens of the east, your brethren of the Brazos and Colorado, expect your assistance, afford it, and check the march of the enemy and not suffer your own land to become the seat of war; without your immediate aid we cannot sustain the war. Fellow-Citizens, I call upon you, as your executive officer, to "turn out:" it is your country that demands your help. He who longer slumbers on the volcano must be a mad-man. He who refuses to aid his country in this her hour of peril and danger is a traitor. All persons able to bear arms in Texas are called on to rendezvous at the town of Gonzales, with the least possible delay, armed and equipped for battle. *Our rights and our liberties must be protected;* to the battle field march, and save the country. An approving world smiles upon us, the God of battles is on our side, and victory awaits us. Confidently believing that your energies will be sufficient for the occasion, and that your efforts will be ultimately successful,

I subscribe myself your fellow-citizen,
HENRY SMITH, *Governor.*

As soon as Travis' letter was received at Washington, the Convention, which was then assembled, immediately broke up in great disorder. The Delegates fled, some in one direction, and some in another, leaving the papers to be signed by some one whom they at that time appointed for that purpose. A few of the members swam across the Brazos river in the hurry and confusion of the moment, rather than wait for a ferryman to take them over. Men were seen hurrying away from the Convention bareheaded, and going, they scarce knew whither. All was excitement and confusion. They felt that now was a time for action, and the scarce knew how to act.

General Houston instantly issued a proclamation calling for volunteers; the following is a copy of his proclamation, and will serve still further to exhibit the distressing situation of the country at this time:

ARMY ORDERS.

Convention Hall,
Washington, March 2, 1836.

War is raging on the frontiers. Bexar is besieged by two thousand of the enemy, under the command of Gen. Siesma. Reinforcements are on their march to unite with the besieging army. By the last report our force in Bexar was only one hundred and fifty men strong. The citizens of Texas must rally to the aid of our army, or it will perish. Let the citizens of the east march to the combat. The enemy must be driven from our soil, or desolation will accompany this march upon us. *Independence is declared*—it must be maintained. Immediate action, united with valor, alone can achieve the great work. The services of all are forthwith required in the field.

Sam. Houston,
Commander in Chief of the Army.

P. S. It is rumored that the enemy are on their march to Gonzales, and that they have entered the colonies. The fate of Bexar is unknown. The country must and shall be defended. The patriots are *appealed to in behalf of their bleeding country.*

S. H.

The proclamations of Governor Smith and General Houston were answered by the people, one and all, appearing at Gonzales without delay. A company had, previous to this, made an attempt to gain admission into Col. Travis' company, but the place was so completely surrounded by Mexicans that their attempts proved futile; and finding it impossible to render Travis any assistance, they came to Gonzales in obedience to the call of Gen. Houston.

Ever since the 23rd of February, the little garrison at San Antonio consisting of one hundred Texans, had been closely besieged by about two thousand of the enemy's troops commanded by Santa Anna. Several hundred of the Mexicans had been killed without any loss having been sustained on the part of the Texans, when the brave commander at the Alamo, Col. Travis, addressed the following letter to the President of the Convention:

Commandancy of the Alamo,
Bexar, March 3, 1836.

Sir:—In the present confusion of the political authorities of the country, and in absence of the Commander in Chief, I beg leave to communicate to you the situation of this garrison. You have doubtless already seen my official report of the action of the 25th ult., made on that day to Gen. Sam. Houston, together with the various communications heretofore sent by express. I shall therefore confine myself to what has transpired since that date.

From the 25th to the present date, the enemy have kept up a bombardment from two howitzers, (one a five and a half inch and the other an eight inch,) and a heavy cannonade from two long nine pounders, mounted on a battery on the opposite side of the river at the distance of four hundred yards from our walls. During this period the enemy have been busily employed in encircling us with entrenched encampments on all sides at the following distances, to-wit: In Bejar, four hundred yards west; in Lavilleta, three hundred yards south; on the ditch eight hundred yards northwest, and at the old mill eight hundred yards north. Notwithstanding all this, a company of thirty-two men from Gonzales, made their way in to us on the morning of the 1st inst., at three o'clock, and Col. J. B. Bonham (a courier from Gonzales) got in this morning at eleven o'clock, without molestation. I have so fortified this place that the walls are generally proof again cannon balls; and I still continue to entrench on the inside and strengthen the walls by throwing up dirt. At least two hundred shells have fallen inside of our works without having injured a single man; indeed, we have been so fortunate as not to lose a man from any cause; and we have killed many of the enemy. The spirits of my men are still high, although they have had much to depress them. We have contended for ten days against an enemy whose numbers are variously estimated at from fiteen hundred to six thousand men, with Gen. Ramires Siesma and Col. Batres, the aids-de-camp of Santa Anna, at their head. A report was circulated that Santa Anna himself was with the enemy, but I think it was false. A reinforcement of about one thousand men is now entering Bejar from the west, and I think it more than probable that Santa Anna is now in town, from the rejoicing we hear. Col. Fannin is said to be on the march to this place with reinforcements; but I fear it is not true, as I have repeatedly sent to him for aid without receiving any. Col. Bonham, my special messenger, arrived at La Bahia fourteen days ago, with a request for aid; and on the arrival of the enemy in Bejar ten days ago, I sent an express to Col. Fannin which arrived at Goliad on the next day, urging him to send us reinforcements—*none have yet arrived.* I look to the *colonies alone* for aid: unless it arrives soon, I shall have to fight the enemy on his own terms. I will, however, do the best I can, under the circumstances; and I feel confident that the determined valor and desperate courage heretofore evinced by my men, will not fail them in the last struggle; and although they may be sacrificed to the vengeance of a Gothic enemy, the victory will cost the enemy so dear, that it will be worse for him than a defeat. I hope your honorable body will hasten on reinforcements, ammunition, and provisions to our aid, as soon as possible. We have provisions for twenty days for the men we have—our supply of ammunition is limited. At least five hundred pounds of cannon powder, and two hundred rounds of six, nine, twelve, and eighteen pound balls—ten kegs of rifle powder and a supply of lead, should be sent to this place without delay, under a sufficient guard.

If these things are promptly sent and large reinforcements are hastened to this frontier, this neighborhood will be the great and decisive battle ground. The power of Santa Anna is to be met here or in the colonies; we had better meet it here, than to suffer a war of desolation to rage in our settlements. A blood red banner floats from the church of Bejar and in the camp above us, in token that the war is one of vengeance against rebels; they have declared us as such, and demanded that we should surrender at discretion, or that this garrison should be put to the sword. Their threats have no influence on me or my men, but to make all fight with desperation; and that high-souled courage which characterizes the patriot who is willing to die in defence of his country's liberty and his own honor.

The citizens of this municipality are all our enemies except those who have joined us heretofore; we have but three Mexicans now in the fort; those who have not joined us in this extremity, should be declared public enemies, and their property should aid in paying the expenses of the war.

The bearer of this will give your honorable body a statement more in detail, should he escape through the enemy's line—*God and Texas—Victory or Death!*

Your obedient servant,

W. Barret Travis,

Lieut. Col. Com.

P. S. The enemy's troops are still arriving, and the reinforcements will probably amount to two or three thousand.

About twelve o'clock on the night of the sixth of March, the entire Mexican force commanded by Santa Anna, the Bonaparte of Mexico, attacked the Alamo. The little band of Texan heroes bravely defended the fort until daylight, at which time but seven of them were found alive. These cried for quarter, but were told there was no mercy for them. When their demand for quarter was refused they gallantly defended themselves and continued fighting until all were butchered. Colonel Travis, on whose head a price was set, when wounded and dying was attacked by a Mexican officer who seemed intent on "*striking the body of the dead,*" mustering his fast waning strength for one last brave deed the undaunted Travis met and plunged his sword in the breast of the savage Mexican, and they fell, the victor with the victim, to rise no more. Col. Bowie who had been confined for some time by sickness was murdered in his bed. One woman, Mrs. Dickenson, and a colored servant of Col. Travis, were the only persons in the fort whose lives were spared. The bodies of the slain were thrown into a heap in the center of the Alamo and burned. On Col. Bowie's body being brought out Gen. Cos remarked that he was too brave a man to be burned like a dog—then added "never mind, throw him in."

Immediately after the fall of the Alamo, Gen. Santa Anna sent Mrs. Dickenson and Col. Travis's servant to Gen. Houston's camp, accompanied by a Mexican with a flag who bore a note from Santa Anna offering the Texans peace and a general amnesty if they would lay down their arms and submit to his Government. Gen. Houston's reply was "True, sir you, have succeeded in killing some of our brave men, but the Texans are not yet whipped."

Some time previous to this Colonel Fannin had been sent to La Bahia to raise volunteers in order, if he deemed it practicable, to proceed against Matamoras. While raising these volunteers he was attacked at La Bahia by an army of Mexicans and forced to retreat. He was however overtaken and surrounded by the Mexicans, about nine miles from La Bahia on the Victoria road; and, after most bravely and gallantly defending himself for several hours, he at length surrendered himself and army as prisoners of war. The army was then taken back to La Biha, and there condemned to be shot. A few of the soldiers succeeded in breaking through the ranks and escaped: the remainder were massacred on the 19th of March.

On hearing of the fall of the Alamo and the massacre of Fannin's troops, the whole country was plunged in confusion and dismay. A universal panic seemed to overspread the land. There were not troops in the country except the small army commanded by Gen. Houston. All was dark and gloomy; we had naught to encourage us except the generous sympathy which our brethren in the United States of the North had manifested for us, and the hopes of assistance from them.

General Houston, not wishing to jeopardize the country by risking an engagement with the enemy at Gonzales, instantly ordered a retreat to the Colorado river. All of the families west of the Colorado fled eastward with great haste. The Texan forces set fire to Gonzales previous to leaving the place and burnt it to the ground, in order to prevent the Mexicans from reaping any advantage from any place they might find there. On arriving on the Colorado the army pitched their encampment on the east bank of the river, part of them opposite Columbus, under the command of Col. Burleson, and the remainder under Sherman above the town, at the Shoals known as Dewees' ford. The Texans were closely followed by the Mexican army under Col. Felisola. Felisola's army pitched their upon! we cannot expect reinforcements! I have called for volunteers but almost in vain. There are but a few of us, and if we are beaten the fate of Texas is sealed! The salvation of the country depends upon the first battle had with the enemy. For this reason I intend to retreat, and I shall continue to retreat, till I find I can beat the Mexicans in battle, if I am obliged to go even to the banks of the Sabine.

After having closed his address he ordered an instant retreat to the Brazos river. All the buildings were then set on fire, and we immediately took up our line of march for the Brazos.

Many persons have greatly blamed General Houston for this, but, under the circumstances of the time, it was, in my opinion, the wisest movement he could have made.

There were at this time about seventy-five families who had encamped on the river awaiting the movements of the army, thinking if a battle were fought they would not be obliged to go any further. Among these families was my own; I now left the army and with the families set out on the retreat.

The Texan army were intending to stop at the Brazos river, at Colonel Gross's, about twenty miles above San Felipe de Austin. The families crossed the river at San Felipe and encamped at the edge of the prairie, on the east side of the Brazos. Here we remained until the Mexican army, which had left the Colorado on the same day that we did, came up. The Mexican force had crossed the Colorado river about eight miles below Columbus, at the crossing of the old Atoskoscita road, and come on to San Felipe. After having set fire to the town and burned it to the ground, the families again set out to flee before the enemy; we rode hastily across the prairie till we reached Spring creek, a distance of about twenty-five miles. There we again encamped. The Texan army lay encamped on the Brazos about ten days. During the time we were encamped at Spring creek, awaiting the movements of the two armies, a part of us went down to Harrisburg, on Buffalo Bayou, for the purpose of bringing up a couple of cannons, which had been sent to this place by our brethren of the United States, for the army under Gen. Houston. We assisted in taking the cannons up to the army on the Brazos. About the time of our arrival on the Brazos with the cannons, Gen. Houston ordered the army to march so as to intercept the enemy, who had gone down the Brazos river to Columbia, and were moving eastward. On our reaching Spring creek, Houston not knowing what the movements of the Mexicans might be, sent me with a company of men to guard what women and children were at that place to the Trinity.

But I must not forget to relate an anecdote concerning the bravery of one of our Texan women. A Mrs. Mann, who was in our company, had discovered that a yoke of her oxen had been taken to draw the cannons. With a heroism which might have been commendable had the oxen been taken by the enemy, as soon as she discovered it she took a pistol, and riding up to the foremost officer, ordered him to stop, or she would shoot him through. He instantly ordered the enemy to halt, whereupon she entered her complaint; she then seeing her oxen, rode into the midst of the army and ordered the wagoner to loose her oxen or she would shoot him, at the same time presenting her pistol. She was immediately obeyed, and had the satisfaction of seeing her oxen once more at liberty.

The Texan army moved down the prairie between Buffalo Bayou and the San Jacinto river, until they reached the crossing of the San Jacinto, where they came in contact with the Mexican army under Santa Anna. On the 21st of April, the ever memorable battle of San Jacinto was fought. The Texans were victorious, and after having sustained a loss of comparatively nothing, succeeded in capturing the Mexican General, Santa Anna, and all the army, who survived the battle.

The following official report of General Houston gives the history of the battle of San Jacinto:

Head Quarters of the Army,
San Jacinto, April 25, 1836.

To His Excellency, D. G. Burnett, President of the Republic of Texas.

SIR:—I regret extremely that my situation, since the battle of the 21st, has been such as to prevent my rendering you my official report of the same previous to this time.

I have the honor to inform you, that on the evening of the 18th instant, after a forced march of fifty-five miles, which was effected in two days and a half, the army arrived opposite Harrisburg; that evening a courier of the army was taken, from him I learned that Gen. Santa Anna, with one division of his three troops, had marched in the direction of Lynch's ferry, on the San Jacinto, burning Harrisburg as he passed down. The army was ordered to be in readiness to march early the next morning. The main body effected a crossing over Buffalo Bayou below Harrisburg on the morning of the 19th, having left the baggage, the sick, and a sufficient camp guard in the rear. We continued the march throughout the night, and without refreshment. At daylight we resumed the line of march, and in a short distance our scouts encountered those of the enemy, and we received information that Gen. Santa Anna was at New Washington, and would that day take up the line of march for Anahuac, crossing at Lynch's. The Texan army halted within a half a mile of the ferry in some timber, and were engaged in slaughtering beeves, when the army of Santa Anna was discovered to be approaching in battle array, having been encamped at Clopper's point, eight miles below. Disposition was immediately made of our forces, and preparation for his reception. He took a position with his infantry and artillery in the centre, occupying an island of timber, his cavalry covering the left flank. The artillery then opened on our encampment, consisting of one double fortified medium brass twelve pounder.

The infantry, in columns, advanced with the design of charging our lines, but were repulsed by a discharge of grape and cannister from our artillery, consisting of two six-pounders. The enemy had occupied a piece of timber within rifle shot of the left wing of our army, from which an occasional interchange of small arms took place between the troops until the enemy withdrew to a position on the bank of the San Jacinto, about three quarters of a mile from our encampment, and commenced a fortification. A short time before sunset our mounted men, about eighty-five in number, under the special command of Col. Sherman, marched out for the purpose of reconnoitering the enemy. Whilst advancing they received a volley from the left of the enemy's infantry, and after a sharp rencounter with their cavalry, in which ours acted well, and performed feats of daring chivalry, they retired in good order, having had two men severely wounded and several horses killed; in the meantime, the infantry under the command of Lieut. Col. Willard and Col. Bush's regiment, with the artillery, had marched out for the purpose of covering the retreat if necessary. All those fell back in good order to our encampment about sunset, and remained without any ostensible action until the 21st, at half-past three o'clock—taking the first refreshment they had enjoyed for two days. The enemy in the meantime extended the right flank of their infantry so as to occupy the extreme point of a skirt of timber on the bank of the San Jacinto, and secured their left by a fortification, about five feet high, constructed of packs and baggage, leaving an opening in the centre of the breastwork, in which their artillery was placed—the cavalry upon their left wing.

About nine o'clock on the morning of the 21st, the enemy were reinforced by five hundred choice troops, under the command of Gen. Cos, increasing their effective force to upwards of fifteen hundred men, while our aggregate force for the field numbered seven hundred and eighty three. At half-past three o'clock in the

8

evening, I ordered the officers of the Texan army to parade their respective commands, having in the meantime ordered the bridge on the only road communicating with the Brazos, distant eight miles from our encampment, to be destroyed, thus cutting off all possibility of escape. Our troops paraded with alacrity and spirit, and were anxious for the contest. Their conscious disparity in numbers only seemed to increase their enthusiasm and confidence, and heightened their anxiety for the conflict. Our situation afforded me an opportunity of making the arrangements preparatory to the attack, without exposing our designs to the enemy. The first regiment, commanded by Col. Burleson, was assigned the centre. The second regiment, under the command of Col. Sherman, formed the left wing of the army. The artillery, under the special command of Col. G. W. Heakley, inspector-general, was placed on the right of the first regiment; and four companies of infantry under the command of Lieut. Col. Henry Millard, sustained the artillery upon the right. Our cavalry, sixty-one in number, commanded by Col. Mirabeau B. Lamar, (whose gallant and daring conduct on the previous day had attracted the admiration of his comrades, and called him to that station,) placed on our extreme right, completed our line. Our cavalry was first despatched to the enemy's left, for the purpose of attracting their notice, whilst an extensive island of timber afforded us an opportunity of concentrating our forces, and displaying from that point agreeably to the previous design of the troops. Every evolution was performed with alacrity, the whole advancing rapidly in line and through an open prairie without any protection whatever for our men. The artillery advanced and took station within two hundred yards of the enemy's breastwork, and commenced an effective fire with grape and cannister.

Col. Sherman, with his regiment, having commenced the action upon our left wing, the whole line, at the centre and on the right, advancing in double quick time, rung the war cry, "*Remember the Alamo!*" received the enemy's fire, and advancing within point blank shot, before a piece was discharged from our lines. Our line advanced without a halt, until they were in possession of the woodland and the enemy's breastwork. The right wing of Burleson's and the left of Millard's taking possession of the breastwork; our artillery having gallantly charged up within seventy yards of the enemy's cannon, when it was taken by our troops.

The conflict lasted about eighteen minutes from the time of the close action, until we were in possession of the enemy's encampment, taking one piece of cannon (loaded,) four stands of colors, all their camp equipage, stores, and baggage. Our cavalry had charged and routed that of the enemy upon the right, and given pursuit to the fugitives, which did not cease until they arrived at the bridge, which I have mentioned before. Capt. Kames, always among the foremost in danger, commanded the pursuers. The conflict in the breastwork lasted but a few moments; many of the troops encountered hand to hand, and not having the advantage of bayonets on our side, our riflemen used their pieces as war clubs, breaking many of them off at the breech.

The route commenced at half-past four, and the pursuit by the main army continued until twilight. A guard was then left in charge of the enemy's encampment, and our army returned with their killed and wounded. In the battle our loss was—two killed and twenty-three wounded, six of whom mortally. The enemy's loss was —six hundred and thirty killed, among which was one general officer, four colonels, two lieutenant-colonels, seven captains, and twelve lieutenants. Wounded—two hundred and eighty, of which were five colonels, three lieutenant-colonels, two second lieutenant-colonels, seven captains, and one cadet. Prisoners—seven hundred and thirty, President General Santa Anna, General Cos, four colonels, aids to General Santa Anna, six lieutenant-colonels, the private secretary of General Santa Anna, and the colonel of the Guerrero Battalion, are included in the number. General Santa Anna was not taken until the 22nd, and General Cos on yesterday, very few having escaped. About six hundred muskets, three hundred sabres, and two hundred pistols have been collected since the action; several hundred mules and horses were taken, and nearly twelve thousand dollars in specie.

For several days previous to the action, our troops were engaged in forced marches, exposed to excessive rains, and the additional inconveniences of extremely bad roads, ill supplied with rations and clothing—yet amid every difficulty they bore up with cheerfulness and fortitude, and performed their marches with speed and alacrity—there was no murmuring.

Previous to and during the action, my staff evinced encampment on the west side of the Colorado about a mile from Columbus. Santa Anna's division of the army having to come by way of La Bahia had not as yet come up with Felisola.

In this situation our army lay for five or six days, waiting for assistance to come from the east, and making preparations to engage the enemy in battle as soon as a sufficient number of volunteers should arrive. But the fear of the enemy was so great that but few came in, and Houston's whole army only amounted to eight hundred men. A great excitement prevailed among the troops to know what was to be done. Most of the army seemed to manifest a desire to cross the river and give the Mexicans battle. On the night of the 24th of March, General Houston sent for me to go to his camp. He inquired of me the situation of the place where the enemy were encamped, and what were the chances for a battle provided we crossed the river at the ford and went up towards the enemy's camps. Being well acquainted with the place I informed him that in my opinion, the chances were very favorable. I thought we might cross the river and draw up the army within a hundred and fifty yards of the enemy's camp without being discovered by them; and at that place there was a favorable situation for a battle ground. Houston then dismissed me, after having first requested me to come to his camp very early the next morning. During the night, in company with two other men, I went to a crossing of the river near the Mexican camp, in order to spy out the situation of the enemy and see their movements. About day-break we climbed a tree to enable us to get a fair view of the Mexicans; we noticed an unusual parade at the encampment; there seemed to be more music than common, and more booming of cannons. After having learned as much as we could of their movements we descended from the tree and, obedient to the request of Gen. Houston, I repaired to his camp. On arriving at his tent I was informed by him that a gentlemen by the name of Carr had that night arrived in camp from Victoria, bringing information that Santa Anna with his army had crossed the Guadulupe at Victoria and was hastening on to reinforce Felisola, and they had had about time to arrive there that night. This then accounted for the unusual excitement we had perceived among the Mexicans, Santa Anna having, without doubt arrived. General Houston now paraded his army, who were expecting to cross the river and engage in battle. Houston then addressed the army as nearly as I can remember in the following words.

Fellow Soldiers:—The only army in Texas is now present. Travis has fallen with his men at the Alamo. Fannin's troops have been massacred at La Bahia! There are none who will come to my aid! The citizens of the east dare not, or will not come to aid us! There is here but a small force, yet it is the only army that Texas can offer. We might cross the river and attack the enemy! perhaps we might be victorious but again we might be overcome! If we are overpowered by Felisola's army which has, without doubt, been largely reinforced during the past night by the army under Santa Anna, we have no other army to retreat back every disposition to be useful, and were actively engaged in their duties. In the conflicts I am assured that they demeaned themselves in such manner as proved them worthy members of the army of San Jacinto. Colonel T. J. Rusk, Secretary of War, was on the field. For weeks his services had been highly beneficial to the army; in battle he was on the left wing where Colonel Sherman's command first encountered and drove the enemy; he bore himself gallantly, and continued his efforts and activity, remaining with the pursuers until resistance ceased.

I have the honor of transmitting herewith a list of all the officers and men who were engaged in the action, which I respectfully request may be published as an act of justice to the individuals. For the commanding General to attempt discrimination as to the conduct of those who commanded in the action, or those were commanded, would be impossible. Our success in the action is conclusive proof of their daring intrepidity and courage; every officer and man proved himself worthy of the cause in which he battled, while the triumph received a lustre from the humanity which characterized their conduct after victory, and richly entitles them to the admiration and gratitude of their General. Nor should we withhold the tribute of our grateful thanks from that Being who rules the destinies of nations, and has in the time of greatest need enabled us to arrest a powerful invader whilst devastating our country. I have the honor to be, with high consideration,

Your obedient servant,

SAM. HOUSTON, *Commander-in-Chief.*

A part of Santa Anna's army had been left on the Brasos under the command of General Felisola; Santa Anna begged that these troops might be permitted to leave the country without further molestation. To this General Houston consented. On the morning after the battle a runner was sent to the families who had encamped between the Trinity and San Jacinto rivers, about twenty miles from the battle ground, to let us know the fate of the battle. There were about one hundred and fifty or two hundred families there; after having received the joyful tidings we immediately left for our homes. We arrived on the east bank of the Colorado on the 10th of the present month. Here all was gloom and desolation! Our once happy homes were now in ashes! The cattle had all been driven off and there was naught to welcome us back again to the homes which we had left but a few weeks before, All was stillness round and the angel of gloom seemed to be hanging over the once lovely place. A shudder ran through our frames on beholding the change. We were unable to realise that this was the place where we had spent so many days in peace and happiness! But enough; gladly would I shut out the sad scene from my memory, but that is impossible. We encamped on the east bank of the river feeling unwilling to cross over, there being but two or three families of us and no Americans west of the river. As we knew nothing where the Mexican army were, soon after our reaching the river in company with another gentleman, I rode down to the Atoskoscita crossing of the river to see if any vestiges of the Mexican army were there to be seen.

When we had nearly reached the crossing we heard a noise as of horsemen; we secreted ourselves in the timber, and soon learned it to be the Mexican army under Felisola crossing the river on their way out of the country. We then rode back to our families and commenced constructing rafts to enable us to cross the river with our families. As soon as we judged the Mexicans to be entirely away from our part of the country and all danger removed from us, we crossed the river to the place where our homes had once stood. We have here built us camps in which we shall remain until we can build houses. We know well by past experience the trials of living in camps, and we can do it cheerfully and happily. We feel assured that let what trials and hardships may come we can experience nothing worse than we have already done. Our greatest cause of fear arises from the fact that every person west of us has gone to the east! we are almost alone in this part of the country.

I will endeavor in my next letter to give you a faint idea as far as I am able, of the retreat of the families from Western Texas on the invasion of the country by the Mexican army.

Your affectionate friend,

W. B. D

LETTER XX.

Columbus, Texas, Oct. 12, 1836.

DEAR FRIEND:—In my last I promised to give you a sketch of "the runaway scrape," as the retreat of the families in last March, is called. The description which I shall give you will indeed be but a sketch, for 'tis beyond the power of pen to give anything but a faint idea of that dreadful time. Tongue cannot tell nor words reveal the horrors of that period. It seemed as though the whole country was panic struck. Every family in the country immediately left their homes as soon as the army commenced its retreat. Those who lived farthest east, and who were of course in the least danger, seemed to be the most alarmed, and fled with the greatest haste. Here we saw the old saying, "it grows as it goes," verified. Those who were most easily frightened, and the first to fly without waiting to know the truth of the situation, had gone on and in their flight had given exaggerated accounts of the danger which passed from mouth to mouth, till the people of Eastern Texas believed the whole force of the enemy were close upon them. The panic and fear increased; the roads were literally crowded with wagons, men, women, and children, hurrying on with the greatest speed to a place of safety. On they went, one after another, through woods and across prairies, seeming to have nothing in view but to go eastward. Here might be seen delicate ladies wading through mud and dirt, striving to hasten their footsteps and free themselves from the marshes; but at every step they would bog in deeper and deeper, till at last after toiling long they would succeed in getting out tired and wearied, yet still they would press on, hoping soon to reach a place of safety. Again, loaded wagons rolled on one after another in the greatest haste, till they came near the crossing of a stream, then each would strive to be first and foremost, in order that they might be soonest across the stream; now you might behold children falling from the wagons which still kept on leaving the children behind, till another wagon came along and picked them up. Mothers have in this manner been separated from their children for days, and some for weeks, as the wagons would often take a different course; all seemed to look out for themselves alone: the fountain of benevolence seemed dried up: on, on they pressed, regardless of all, save themselves. So great was the alarm that families seated in happiness at their meals, on hearing that the Mexican army were approaching, wildly rushed from their houses and leaving all their property exposed to the incursions of the enemy, fled from their homes to save themselves from the approaching danger.

Every manner of crossing rivers was resorted to at this time; there being but few ferries and the water-courses very high. We were frequently obliged to tax our inventive faculties to find methods for crossing. To give you an example of our difficulties, I will tell you the manner in which we crossed the San Jacinto river. There were about seventy-five wagons in the company, and on arriving at the river we found no way to cross;

the river was up to the top of the banks, and there was no ferry; the question now arose how are we to get across! we might construct rafts but the stream was so rapid that it would be hazardous to cross on them! yet cross we must, and some way must be thought of. But, thanks to the invention of two Yankees, the difficulty was soon obviated. They proposed that we should look us out a couple of very tall pine trees, so that their length might be sufficient to reach across the river, cut them down, peal the bark from them and then lay them across the river so near to each other that we might place the wagons on them and pull them across the river with a rope. This we did, upon each loaded wagon we placed a number of women and children, and the seventy-five wagons were all drawn over in the course of half a day.

You may perhaps imagine that the people all returned immediately to their homes upon the departure of the Mexicans from the country, but such is not the case; many of them have not yet returned. When I returned home there were no persons west of the Colorado river. I therefore was obliged to hire a couple of young men to remain with us and assist in protecting us from the Indians; but in a short time several families returned who resided on the river both above and below Columbus.

A few days after our return, some Indians attacked a family who resided on the east bank of the Colorado, about nine miles above this town. The attack was made during the night. The family locked themselves up in the house, and protected themselves as well as they were able. One negro was shot; in the morning word was sent down to us of the situation in which the family were placed. Three young men besides myself instantly armed ourselves and went up to the place. Before we reached the house the Indians had departed; we followed their trail and overtook them about a mile distant on the opposite side of the river. We attacked them and fought them for about six miles, when they succeeded in getting into a thick bottom, and thus eluded pursuit. We did not kill any of the Indians, though we supposed some of them to be severely wounded, as we saw a great deal of blood in their trail. I got slightly wounded myself, by an arrow, in my arm, though it did not prove serious.

I had almost forgotten to tell you what became of the Texan army after the battle of San Jacinto. General Houston was severely wounded in the battle, and soon after left the country for New Orleans. Before leaving the country he sent the army under the command of Col. Sherman to Goliad, to be stationed on the frontier. When the army arrived on this river, Col. Sherman learned that a man, who was a citizen of this country, and resided on this river, had not only remained here during the invasion, but had also given the Mexicans all the assistance and information in his power; for which he had been liberally rewarded by them; thus turning traitor to his country. Upon learning this Col. Sherman sent a Major with an escort of men to take the man prisoner. But the Major, as it chanced, was but little better than the man he was sent to take prisoner, and as you may suppose, was easily bribed to let his prisoner escape. On his wav back to the encampment, he called at my camp and desired to remain with me during the night, telling me at the same time the errand that had taken him from the army. I welcomed him to my camp. He stated that he and his men were out of provisions and very hungry. I had at that time about a half a bushel of corn which indeed was nearly all the provisions I was possessed of. This I ground in a steel mill, and divided my mite with him. The next morning the Major left very early for the encampment of the army, which was on Skull creek, about nine miles distant, taking with him a couple of my horses which I had hobbled. After breakfast I went out to get my horses, but to my surprise could find nothing of them. I searched for them throughout the day, but of course to no purpose. At night an old gentleman suggested to me the idea of their having been taken by the Major, and advised me to seek them at the encampment of the army. This advice I followed. Mounted on the horse of my friend, I rode to Col. Sherman's camp and informed him of my loss, and upon whom my suspicions rested; he instantly called up the Major and interrogated him concerning the theft. The horses we found had indeed been taken by him, one he had already disposed and the other was tied at the camp. The Colonel then obliged him to restore the stolen property, after which I returned with my horses to my home.

Other circumstances like this we frequently had to contend with. During the struggle at one time it became necessary to obtain horses for the army. An order was issued for horses to be pressed into the service wherever they could be found. Several persons took advantage of this order to benefit their own pockets. They went round calling themselves press-masters, and by this means soon obtained a fine cavalyard of horses, which they drove into Arkansas for sale. I might enumerate many other circumstances of this kind, but it is unnecessary. You can judge something of the trials to which we were brought during this mournful period, but the extent of our sufferings you can never know, unless you should be called upon to witness such scenes; which indeed it is my hope and prayer you never may. Nor have our trials ended with the war. On account of being obliged to quit our homes we were unable to cultivate our land and the consequence is a great scarcity of provisions. We have again lived over the horrors of 1823. The country has been completely ravaged by the armies. Houses have been robbed of their contents, provisions taken from them, the beeves have been driven out the country, and the game frightened off. We have suffered during the summer exceedingly; some of us have tried to raise a late crop of corn by planting in June, but this experiment has not succeeded well. What we are to do I know not, but I trust some way will be provided for us. I know the same hand which has guided us thus far is able to protect us still farther, and I do not distrust his beneficence. I will try and put my confidence in Him and believe that He will not forsake us in this our day of distress.

I mentioned that Gen. Houston was severely wounded in the battle of San Jacinto, and was obliged to go to New Orleans. He returned from that city some time in the summer entirely cured of his wounds. Before

Houston left this country, he addressed a most tender and affectionate letter to his companions in arms, a copy of which I will here insert:

ARMY ORDERS.

Head Quarters,
San Jacinto, May 5, 1836.

COMRADES:—Circumstances connected with the battle of the 21st, render our separation for the present unavoidable. I need not express to you the many painful sensations which that necessity inflicts upon me. I am solaced, however, by the hope, that we shall soon be re-united in the great cause of liberty. Brigadier General Rusk is appointed to command the army for the present. I confide in his valor, his patriotism, and his wisdom—his conduct in the battle of San Jacinto was sufficient to ensure your confidence and regard.

The enemy, though retreating, are still within the limits of Texas—their situation being known to you, you cannot be taken at surprise. Discipline and subordination will render you invincible—your valor and heroism have proved you unrivaled. Let not contempt for the enemy throw you off your guard. Vigilance is the first duty of a soldier, and glory the proudest reward of his toils.

You have patiently endured privations, hardships and difficulties unappalled; you have encountered odds of two to one of the enemy against you, and borne yourself in the onset and conflict of battle in a manner unknown in the annals of modern warfare. While an enemy to your independence remains in Texas, the work is incomplete, but when liberty is firmly established by your patience and your valor, it shall be fame enough to say, "I was a member of the army of San Jacinto."

In taking leave of my brave comrades in arms, I cannot suppress the expression of that pride which I so justly feel in having had the honor to command them in person, nor will I withhold the tribute of my warmest admiration and gratitude for the promptness with which my orders were executed, and union maintained through the army. At parting my heart embraces you with gratitude and affection.

SAM. HOUSTON, *Commander-in-Chief.*

Our army is still on the frontier and in a good condition! how long it will be necessary for it to continue there it is impossible to say. We know not what will be the movements of Mexico, as she has not as yet acknowledged our independence. But be they what they may she will not find us unprepared! We know that the maintainance of our liberty depends upon our vigilance, and we will ever be ready to face our enemy.

At our election in September, General Houston was elected President of the Republic of Texas by a large majority. All things seem very peaceable at the present time, and, except for the scarcity of provisions, I see no reason why we shall not be prospered this winter. We have commenced re-building the places which were burned down, and again are established in comfortable dwellings. The families are now returning to their homes, though slowly, and all things seem to cast off that dull and dreary look which they so lately wore. If Mexico does not again invade our country, I think we shall by another spring be once more prosperous and happy.

Yours truly and affectionately,

W. B. D.

LETTER XXI.

Columbus, Texas, August 29, 1837.

DEAR FRIEND:—When I last wrote you I thought that I had experienced as severe afflictions as it was possible for any to suffer! But just at that time I was called upon to undergo fresh trials, to undertake one of the most perilous journeys I have ever made in my life, and to witness a scene which was truly heart-rending. One of our neighbors had had some negroes run away from him; he supposed they had started for Mexico and would endeavor to get into that country as soon as possible, if they were not intercepted. Two of his sons, accompanied by a young Scotchman by the name of Steele, started in pursuit of the fugitives, taking the route to San Antonio de Bexar. They went on safely till they reached Gonzales and had crossed the Guadulupe river. As they were ascending the bank of the river they were fired upon by a party of Indians who had seen their approach and concealed themselves for the purpose of killing them. Steele was shot, Collins Beeson was killed instantly, and the horse of Leander

Beesan shot down from under him. He immediately sprang back into the river and swam with all possible speed to the opposite shore, closely followed by some one whom he supposed to be one of the Indians. Beesan, however, succeeded in out-swimming him, and on reaching the shore ran with all possible speed into the bottom. Finding it impossible to travel rapidly with his boots on, since they were so heavy with water, he pulled them off and come on bare-footed. In this situation he at length reached home. In one hour after his arrival he was so swollen and bloated from the fatigue of running, and the bruises he had received in forcing his way through the thick bushes, as to be unable to step. In this distressing situation he remained several days.

On his return, he told us of his encounter with the Indians, stating that his brother he knew was killed, but he did not know as Steele was; he knew he was shot but did not think he was dead. On jumping into the river, he, Beesan, had thrown his gun into the river knowing that it would be of no service to him, to prevent the Indians from getting possession of it. He also said that the person who followed him across the river, though he supposed at the time it was an Indian, might have been Steele; for when he secreted himself in the timber, he heard a groan as of a person in distress, who he thought might be Steele. The possibility of finding Steele yet alive caused us to hasten to the place where the affray took place. We succeeded in raising a company of ten men by leaving our families entirely unprotected, and started off with all possible dispatch.

Fortunately for us, there was at the time a gentleman who had just left the army, at my house sick; this gentleman had a very fine spy-glass which he was so kind as to loan us. We started with the intention of riding to Gonzales without making any halt; but on arriving about fifteen miles this side of that place, we saw before us through the timber, a large company of horses. We were unable at first to make out whether it was merely a gang of horses, or a party of Indians; but on dismounting from our horses and viewing them through the spy-glass we discovered them to be Indians, who had apparently seen us and were watching our approach. What to do we scarcely knew! We were determined on going to the Guadalupe and see if Steele was still living. We knew we might leave the road and by going round perhaps avoid the Indians; but we feared if we did so, the Indians would follow us, and, coming up behind us, would fall upon us and kill us ere we were aware of their approach. To go up boldly and attack them was full of danger as their number was much larger than our own. We finally decided to advance and attack them. We rode along towards them concealed from them by the timber and a hill, till we came full upon them. They, supposing we had taken a different course, were wholly unprepared for an attack, and instantly fled. We pursued them for some distance and then continued as fast as possible on our way to Gonzales. When we arrived at Gonzales, we found the whole face of the earth completely covered with the footsteps of Indians, which looked fresh and new. On looking across the river we beheld the body of Collins Beesan lying upon the ground. We were now again at a loss to know how to proceed; the river was high so that it could be forded only by a very high horse; of such there were but three. We were fearful that the Indians knew of our being there and were lying in wait for us. We at length decided to place one sentinel at the edge of the bottom to give an alarm if the Indians approached in our rear, and another on the bank of the river to watch and tell us if they were on the opposite bank, where the prairie bluffs on to the river. We then prepared to cross the river. Three of us rode over, took the body of our departed friend Beesan, rolled it in a blanket, and carried it to the opposite side of the river. Steele was no where to be found. After having recrossed the river, we rode to an old deserted house where we found a foot-adz. With this we dug a grave where we buried the body of our lamented young friend. We then started on our return home, where we arrived in safety the next day. We afterwards learned that the Indians were encamped about three-quarters of a mile above Gonzales, and the head of Steele was found there.

The loss of both these young men is to be deeply deplored. There was not in the country two young men more promising or more brave. They were possessed of kind, tender feelings, allied to strong minds and steady habits, keeping the welfare of their country ever in their minds.

Steele was a Scotchman who had been in the country but a short time. He was a gentleman of fine education, very polite and gentlemanly in his manners, and apparently of high family. Happy would it be for our country, if there were many more such men as these. Though we deeply feel their loss, we doubt not they have made a happy exchange, and we strive not to murmur.

Perhaps you would like to know what became of Santa Anna our famous prisoner; and indeed the history of that immortal man since he was taken at the battle of San Jacinto cannot fail to be interesting. As he was President of Mexico as well as one of their ablest men, it is not to be wondered at that the people of that country should put forth every exertion to liberate him. Various stratagems were undertaken for this purpose. At one time a Mexican vessel arrived off the coast of Texas, and landed at the mouth of the Brazos. A small boat was sent from the vessel, up to Columbia, in which were six or seven men of different countries. They seemed to have no particular business except looking at the country. They manifested a good deal of surprise on hearing of Santa Anna's imprisonment, and one of them stated that he was acquainted with Santa Anna and would be glad to see him. Permission was granted him to visit Santa Anna in his prison. They then went up the river about ten miles above Columbia to the place where Santa Anna was kept under a strong guard. Suspicion was entertained by some concerning the character of the men belonging to the boat, on account of the enormous quantity of wines on board. These were examined; several bottles were found containing a liquid resembling wine in its color, but with which our people were unacquainted. Some of this was taken out and carried to a chemist to be analyzed. It was found to be a deadly poison. The men on the boat fearing they were suspected, immediately went down the river and getting on board of their vessel put out to sea. We chanced to learn afterwards that it had been their intention to poison the guards while one of their number was informing Santa Anna of their design; and, after having gained possession of his person to carry him off. But on account of our suspecting their motives they failed in the attempt.

Soon after this, Santa Anna proposed to David G. Burnett who was at that time our President, if he would send him back to Mexico he would immediately on his return to that country, acknowledge our independence. Burnett was about to accede to his wishes, thinking he would indeed do as he promised, and commenced making preparations to send him back to his home; but the army hearing of this movement, and knowing the craft and cunning of this extraordinary man, lest he should raise a large army to again invade our country instead of acknowledging our independence when he arrived in his own country, immediately took such measures as to prevent the execution of this project.

After General Houston became President of this Republic, he made preparations for sending Santa Anna back to his country. Knowing his life would be in great peril if he was sent directly to Mexico, he judged it safest to send him to the United States and thence by way of Washington City to Mexico. This course was successfully pursued, and I sincerely hope we are for ever rid of this our able and powerful enemy.

I am, Dear Sir,
Your true and sincere friend.
W. B. D.

LETTER XXII.

Columbus, Texas.
September 6, 1838.

My Dear Friend:—Have I ever given you a full and general description of the waters of our delightful land? I don't recollect ever having done so, and I will therefore improve the present opportunity. Boring

The Sabine is, as you know, the boundary between this Republic and the United States of the north. It is navigable for a considerable distance, has a great deal of valuable pine timber on its banks, and also much good land. Along its banks are several thriving towns, among which Sabine, Belgrade, Salem, and Princeton are the principal. The Sabine empties its waters into a large bay which has sufficient depth of water for vessels of an ordinary draught; at the entrance is a soft mud bar.

The Neches enters the Sabine at the north-western extremity of the bay. This is a stream of considerable size: its principal tributaries are the Angelina and the Attayac rivers and the Ayish Bayou. The land on all these streams is rich and covered with valuable timber. Many fine plantations have, for some time past, been cultivated in the vicinity of Nacogdoches and also near the confluence of the Angelina and Attoyac rivers.

Galveston bay, a large body of water formed by the union of the Trinity and San Jacinto rivers and Buffalo Bayou, lies below the Sabine. It has twelve feet of water on the bar at the entrance, and a good anchorage inside. The Trinity river, its principal contributor, is a stream of considerable importance. On its banks is much fine land and the best of timber. This river has of late attracted considerable attention, and the population is fast increasing. It has several small tributaries, and is formed by three considerable streams, called the forks of the Trinity. The San Jacinto is a stream of but little importance in itself, though rendered famous by the battle fought on its banks, at which we achieved our independence. It flows through a country of very good land, and affords considerable quantities of pine timber.

Buffalo Bayou is a small stream navigable some distance. The land on its banks is of little value. At the head of navigation on this stream, stands Houston, a place rapidly increasing in population and importance.

Below Galveston bay is the mouth of the Brazos with a shifting sand-bar on which the depth of the water varies from four to eight feet. This is the largest river in Texas; the country through which it flows, is very rich and fertile, producing sugar, cotton, corn, and all other southern productions in great abundance. The bottom lands are very rich and heavily timbered, varying in width from one to ten miles on each side. The timber is mostly live oak with an under-growth of holly, wild-peach, and bay. Many old plantations are on its banks, as also many thriving towns. It was on this river that settlements were first made in Western Texas by the Anglo-Americans. Austin county, on this river, is one of the oldest counties in the Republic except the country settled by the Spaniards.

San Bernard, Cedar lake, and Cane Brake creek lie west of the Brazos. These are all minor bodies of water, but they flow through the most extensive body of excellent land in Texas. This is a district about forty miles in width and fifty or sixty miles in length, covered almost entirely with cane brake and forest. In various parts of it many fine plantations have been cleared.

The next harbor is the Passo Cavallo, having ten feet of water in the entrance. Above the entrance, Indians have forded across from the Peninsula to the main land; from this circumstance it derives its name, which signifies the pass of the horse. It has the La Baca bay on the north and Matagorda bay on the north-east. The only river of any importance which empties into Matagorda bay, is the Colorado. This is a rapid stream with the navigation somewhat obstructed by rafts of timber. The surrounding country is very rich, fertile, and beautiful. Many fine settlements have for a long time been made on its banks, and some towns are in existence. It takes its rise far up among the mountains and flows in a beautiful crystal stream to the bay. The timber on its banks is valuable and extensive, there being large bodies of pine and cedar.

The tributaries to La Baca bay are the La Baca and Navidad rivers. Both of these are small streams; they partake of the general character of the rivers of the country, being skirted with a variety of timber.

West of the La Baca bay is Espiritu Santo bay, a shallow body of water with an outlet into La Baca bay and one into Aransaso bay. It is formed by the confluence of the Guadulupe and San Antonio rivers. The Guadulupe is a stream of remarkable beauty. Its principal tributaries are the San Marcos and the Coleto; both having their fountain-heads at the foot of the mountains. The land is rich and the bottoms finely timbered.

The San Antonio river enters the Guadulupe some distance above Espiritu Santo bay, and resembles the Guadulupe in its principal features, though the forest is not so dense. It has but few tributaries for nearly one hundred miles from its mouth, where it receives the Cibolo, the Medina, the Salado, and Leon; these are rapid and clear streams originating in fountains at the foot of the mountains, above the city of San Antonio de Bexar. The land on these streams is very rich and the country surpassingly beautiful.

Below Espiritu Santo lies Aransaso bay with a good entrance and from ten to twelve feet of water on the bar. The harbor is perfectly secure. Into this bay flow several small streams and one river, the Aransaso, of considerable size. There is much good land upon the border of these streams, though a scarcity of timber. The musquit is the principal tree.

Below Aransaso lies the bay of Corpus Christi, accessible to vessels drawing five or six feet of water. Inside this bay is deep water; into this bay flows the river Nueces, a beautiful and rapid stream of considerable magnitude. The land on its banks is of excellent quality. Towards its source it receives the waters of the San Miguel and its tributaries, the Rio Frio and the Leona river. All these streams have their origin at the foot of the mountains, and flow through a country of unrivaled beauty and fertility.

Next is the Rio Grande, which forms the south-western boundary of Texas. Just above its mouth is Brazos Santiago, a harbor with a broad entrance and fifteen feet of water on the bar. The Rio Grande is one of the first class streams on the continent, and extends north-westerly to the forty-first or forty-second degree of north latitude. It is a rapid stream, and rolls a vast volume of water to the ocean, having but few tributaries with which to divide its honors. In its general appearance it resembles the Misissippi, the water being dark and turbid. The lands on its banks are very rich and fertile. On its western bank are many rich and populous Mexican towns.

You have without doubt often read descriptions of a sun-set at sea, but I presume you have never read one of a sun-set on the prairie. Beautiful and splendid as the former is, it does not eclipse the latter. When far away from home and kindred, upon the bosom of the mighty deep, I have sat and watched the mighty orb of day as he slowly sank down into his ocean bed, and thought earth could not afford another sight as beautiful. But when night advances and the dazzling, golden rays of the sun begin to redden, and the mighty day-god himself lays aside his piercing appearance and permits the eye of man to gaze upon him with impunity, then the soul begins to be filled with wonder at the sublimity of the scene. The gorgeous clouds form a rosy pathway for him to tread as he glides downward into his bed of flowers and verdure. Around him float airy purple clouds, while beneath lay others tinged with nature's richest vermillion. As he sinks slowly down he resembles a huge ball of fire falling amidst the grass of the prairie. When the sun is at last hid for the night, from the eye of man, the fleecy clouds float for a few moments beneath the azure sky, and then disappear. Then the bright silver stars come peeping forth, one after another, gladdening the eye with their twinkling, silvery light, and now comes up the full round moon, attended by myriads more of bright stars, into the firmament already studded with these gems. Soon the light is sufficiently bright to enable the student to continue his labors by the moon's bright rays. He who is an admirer of the beauties of nature, cannot look upon a scene like this unmoved. Then the wide prairie which lies spread out on every side, here and there relieved with a clump of trees, serves to render the scene the more enchanting. Poets have often sung of the beauty of Italian skies, but those who have seen both pronounce ours equally beautiful. It does not appear to me possible that there is any land more lovely than Texas. There is such an infinite variety to its scenery that no one can tire of gazing upon it. Peace and tranquility abound here now, and I can scarcely realize that so lately the sound of war was heard in our happy land. I trust the present peace is but a harbinger of many more such happy days to come. I would be glad if you would come to Texas and enjoy with us the pleasures which our delightful country can afford. Emigrants are fast flocking into the country, money and provisions are plenty, and I see no reason why we should not be happy. I think if you ever intend coming here that you will never find a more favorable time than the present.

Affectionately yours,
W. B. D.

LETTER XXIII.

Columbus, Texas,
October 21, 1839.

Dear Friend:—Your last kind letter was duly received. You expressed great pleasure in hearing of our increasing prosperity, and said you thought if this state of things continued you would be with us this fall. Would I could say it has thus far lasted; but we seem to be surrounded by a foe whose hostility can never be exhausted; I refer to the Indians. Their numbers seem to increase rapidly, and within the past year they have been more hostile, have come farther into the settlements, and committed more daring depredations than they have ever done before. They have ever annoyed us exceedingly by coming on to our frontiers, stealing horses and murdering the inhabitants. But, lately, a tribe of northern Indians have moved into the country, and settled up north-east of us among the Cherokees, who have purchased a tract of land in that direction. Among these Cherokees reside portions of several tribes who have ever been among our most deadly foes. The arrival of the northern Indians in their midst seems to have added fury to their breasts already inflamed with wrath and hatred. Now no danger, no fear deters them from venting their rage upon whoever they find in a situation but poorly protected. They have dared to come into our very midst, stealing property, and murdering the settlers.

Last spring a party of these Indians came down within half a mile of this place during the night where were some men and boys, who had been at work in a brick yard. Several robberies had been recently committed, and these persons had staked out their horses, and that night, for the first time, determined to watch for the thieves. Two Indians came up and were about taking the horses, when one of the boys raised up. As he raised himself from the ground, the Indians fired at him wounding him in the hand with an arrow. They then left, going up above the town about six miles, where they crossed the river and stole two thousand dollars worth of very fine race horses from a gentleman who resided there. We immediately made up a company of eleven men and followed after them. We had pursued them about eight miles when we came upon tracks apparently as fresh as our own; the ground was very uneven and hilly, so as to fairly exclude the Indians from our sight, though we knew we must be close upon them. Two of us were sent on a little in advance of the others that we might deceive the Indians in regard to our numbers. The Indians suspecting we should follow them had left two of their number in the rear to give the alarm, if they saw us approaching. These two were seated under a tree a little off the trail, and as De Bland and myself ascended a hill we came within five steps of them before we were discovered. On seeing us they instantly started to their feet and attempted to run to their companions. I raised my gun to my shoulder with the intention of firing upon them; but unfortunately my gun merely snapped. Hearing this the Indians instantly wheeled and were about firing upon me, when our party who had rode round the hill and rode up in front of us came up. Seeing the peril to which we were exposed, a Mr. Wade instantly presented his gun and fired upon the Indian killing him upon the spot. The other fled and succeeded in reaching his companions. We pursued them across the prairie fifteen miles, but they being mounted on horses much fleeter than ours, succeeded in reaching the Navidad and secreted themselves in the timber. Night had now come on and our horses were worn down in the rapid pursuit. We knew we should be unable to keep up the chase during the night, and before morning the Indians would be so much in our advance as to render pursuit useless. We therefore decided to give up following them and return to our occupations at home.

Sometime after this these Indians, carrying out the ever true Indian principle of revenge or death, cam down with a much larger force than before, within a mil and a half of town, and killed two men, a white man an a negro, whom they found erecting a cabin; after whic they immediately left the settlement. As it chance there was a hay-cutter, who was at work a short distanc from where the scene took place. He observed tha there was an unusual number of guns fired, but did n give it sufficient attention to go and learn the caus Soon afterwards he came into town and mentioned thi fact. Three of us decided to go out and see if Indian were lurking there. On arriving at the spot we foun the bodies lying there butchered and mangled in horrible manner; one of them had been scalped, an the whole presented a most ghastly spectacle; man signs of the Indians were also discovered. We returne to town and nine of us started in pursuit of the Indian This number was the largest that could be raised at t time, the most of our men having gone down to Labor against the Toncoway Indians who had encamped ne there. We had no difficulty in following the trail of t Indians, as there was a large number of them. W pursued them out beyond the settlements, but to purpose, not being able to overtake the foe; and n being prepared with men or means for a long march, returned home regretting exceedingly the fruitlessne of the expedition.

But a word now for the works of internal improv ment in this our beloved land. Enactments were pass during the last session of Congress for the protection the country from these incursions of the Indians.

military road from the mouth of the Kiamishua Red river to the river Nueces at the intersection of the road from Bexar to the Presidio del Rio Grande, has been provided for by Congress which is to be sufficiently cleared and bridged to admit the passage of wagons. Blockhouses or garrisons are to be maintained at various points. Around each station are to be surveyed three leagues square of land, and to be laid off in lots of one hundred and sixty acres each; two of these lots are to be reserved to Government for the purposes of fortifications, farming, &c. One of these lots is to be granted as bounty land to each of the soldiers comprising the regiment, who shall have complied faithfully with the terms of enlistment, and the remainder is to be distributed among such able-bodied citizens as will settle upon and cultivate them for the space of two years. The frontier regiment is to consist of eight hundred and forty men, to serve for three years, unless sooner discharged. The regiment is to be divided into fifteen companies of fifty-six men each, and to be stationed in the following manner along the road, one detachment of fifty-six men at Red river, one detachment of one hundred and sixty-eight men at the Three Forks of the Trinity; one detachment of one hundred and twelve men at the Brazos; one detachment of one hundred and twelve men at the Colórado; one detachment of fifty-six men at the San Marcos; one of fifty-six men on the Cibolo; one of fifty-six men at the Rio Frio; one of two hundred and twenty-four at the Nueces. The troops are to cultivate a part of the three hundred and sixty acres reserved to Government for their sustenance. The detachment on the Nueces is to traverse the country between that country and the Rio Grande, at convenient intervals. The construction of this road, garrisoned at stated intervals, will, we trust, afford ample protection to the country below it, and prevent the incursions of the savages.

In addition to this, other works of internal improvement are projected; among these are the Brazos and Galveston Bay railroad; commencing at Austinia on the west shore of Galveston bay, and terminating at Bolivar on the Brazos, intersecting Chocolate Bayou at Liverpool, the whole length thirty-five miles. This road is intended to take the cotton and other produce of the Brazos valley to Galveston bay, where it can be shipped in vessels of large draught. It is also proposed to build a railroad from Houston the present, to Austin the proposed, seat of government. This will connect the counties of the Colorado and Brazos rivers with the head of steamboat navigation on Buffalo Bayou, and by that with Galveston.

Companies have already been incorporated for the purpose of clearing the Colorado river, and also Caney creek, from obstructions to navigation.

A company has been incorporated for the purpose of connecting the Brazos with the west end of Galveston bay by means of canals.

Commissioners have been appointed to mark out a road from Bastrop to Red river by way of the Three Forks of the Trinity.

The authorities of the country are unanimously recognised as legitimate; the laws are just and impartially and faithfully executed. The future is ripe with the most sanguine anticipations of prosperity, wealth, and happiness. Energetic and active emigrants are rapidly flocking into the country. We hope soon to be out of danger from the Indians, being protected by the military road, and with the rest of the world we are at peace. True, Mexico has not yet acknowledged our independence, but we have little to fear from her even should she again invade our country.

I would still advise you to come to Texas. To all who would carve out for themselves fortunes at the expense of a temporary sacrifice of the luxuries of life, in preference to fretting away their lives in earning a subsistence in a country already filled with hungry competitors, I would say come to Texas; buy you farms, or in some way use your talents *industriously*, and be independent. Should the savages attack your homes, or even should our former enemies the Mexicans, again invade our peaceful delightful land, we have the satisfaction of knowing that those homes are richly worth defending.

Your true and sincere friend,

W. B. D.

LETTER XXIV.

Columbus, Texas,
December 17, 1840.

DEAR FRIEND:—As after a fair and beautiful day a storm may be expected to arise, so seems the life of a frontier settler. When all seems still and quiet, we know not how soon we may expect troubles and hardships. For a few moments we are permitted to bask in the sunshine of prosperity, and then dark, murky clouds are seen gathering in the distance, which grow thicker and heavier, completely obscuring the sky as they approach, till at last they break in fury upon our heads. We have been hoping that the military road which I mentioned in my last would soon be established, and we should then have ample protection from the incursions of the relentless savages. But before this could be completed we were called upon to engage again in scenes of danger. In the spring the Cherokees came down upon our north-western frontier, stealing property, killing our surveyors who were engaged in surveying lands, and committing various other depredations; they at last became so troublesome, that a large force was raised and sent against them under the command of General Edward Burleson. This army marched up into the Cherokee country and there had two or three severe battles with the Cherokees; he at last succeeded in bringing them under subjugation. These Indians have resided on the frontier of the United States, and have become well acquainted with the use of fire-arms, in fact they are not excelled in this by our own people, and the task of conquering them was much more difficult than is the case with the southern Indians. But Burleson is a brave General and came off victorious as he ever does, his motto being "Victory or death." The Cherokees being conquered, Burleson and his men returned again to their homes. Scarcely had they arrived before a large party of Camanches, one thousand or more in number, came down from their country on the north-west of us and passing through the heart of our country entered Linville, a town situated on the coast, between the Guadulupe and Colorado rivers. After killing some of the inhabitants, and taking others prisoners, they set fire to the town and burned it to the ground. Strolling parties of these Indians on their way back, fell upon the inhabitants who resided in the settlements, killing them and plundering their houses. The town of Victoria was entered and several persons killed. By this time the startling news of their invasion had reached the Colorado. Several companies were immediately formed, and started in pursuit of the fierce Camanches. A company left Matagorda and moving on came upon their trail just after they left Victoria. A company was formed in Columbus and placed under my command, we fell upon the trail where it crossed the Gonzales road; at the same time a company was formed in La Grange, and under the command of Col. John H. Moore fell upon the trail at the same place I had done. A fourth company was made up at Bastrop commanded by General Burleson, who struck their trail before they reached Plum Creek. The four companies concentrated here, and by dint of very hard riding succeeded in overtaking the enemy at Plum creek. Orders were instantly given to charge upon the foe. This was done as they were crossing the creek, which being very boggy, they found great difficulty in doing; and we were enabled to kill a great many of them, liberate the prisoners, and force them to give up their spoils before they were able to cross the creek. We still continued to follow them after they had crossed, constantly firing upon them. They did not attempt to fight but little, but seemed bent on escaping from us. We kept up the pursuit till their force scattered, and we were unable to effect much by pursuing. The number of Camanches killed we never ascertained, but it was quite large: of our own men not one was killed. When we found farther pursuit useless, we returned to the creek where we had left the prisoners whom we had liberated.

Perhaps it may seem foolishness in me to attempt to describe to you the brutality and cruelty which savage nations practice upon their prisoners, since you have ever been familiar with the heart-sickening tales of their barbarity in the settlement of our own native land. But, dear friend, one can never realise the full extent of their savage ferocity, unless he has had the pain of seeing instances of it. The prisoners whom we were so fortunate as to liberate from these Camanches, were completely covered with the stripes and bruises which they had received from their merciless enemies. Among the spoil which we took from these Camanches, we found large portions of human flesh evidently prepared for cooking. The very thought of their barbarity causes a chill to creep through my veins. One woman, who was taken prisoner by these Indians, told me that two of her children had been taken with her, one of these being very small hindered her progress, which one of the Indians perceiving snatched it from her, and dashed out its brains against a tree. The mourning mother kept on her course sadly, yet not daring to utter a word of complaint. Soon her other child who had been placed upon a pack horse, manifested evident signs of failing strength, and inability to keep up with the savages; then the mother's feelings were destined to undergo fresh trials; the cup was filled to the brim, and she was forced to drink the bitter draught; her fortitude was put to another test, and wrought up to the highest pitch. The Indians perceiving the failing strength of the child, fell upon him with their spears, and having deprived him of the last flickering flame of life, cast his mangled corpse aside to be food for the hungry vultures. Who can paint the agony of that mother's feelings as she beheld both her little ones destroyed in this brutal manner by the hands of her savage masters. Her own safety required her to witness this horrid spectacle with composure; one word of murmur or complaint from her, would have caused them to put her to instant death.

The Camanches are a very numerous tribe of Indians, who reside between our country and Santa Fe. They inhabit all that country lying between the head of the Colorado and the Red river. They have no permanent abiding place, and no towns. They never cultivate the ground, but in their peregrinations they follow the game which affords them means of subsistence. Where the buffalo ranges, there dwells the fierce Camanches. It is useless to send force against them, as one never knows where they are to be found. They may at one time be known to be encamped at a certain place, and before an armed force can reach that place, they will doubtless be removed a hundred miles distant. They are very skillful in equestrianism and always fight on horseback; they are quite expert in war, though not as much so as the northern Indians; being unaccustomed to the use of fire-arms. If their enemy flees before them when charged upon, he has but little chance of escape, since they are such excellent horsemen as to be able to overtake him, though he has greatly the advantage in starting; but if he stands his ground, showing a dauntless spirit and a disposition to fight or die, they seldom make a second charge. They never commit depredations during the night but always under the full light of day.

Emigrants are still coming to the country to enjoy with us the delights of our American Italy. The country indeed seems to be filling up rapidly, and is, I believe, destined to support a dense population. I am happy to state that the new comers seem to be people of intelligence and enterprise; indeed none but enterprising persons would think of coming to a country like this, where the vengeful red man stands ever ready to fall upon the unprotected and unsuspecting, and where we are yet uncertain what course our former masters the Mexicans will pursue. But we have one thing to comfort us, " what we sow in tears we shall doubtless reap in joy." We still look forward to a future replete with happiness, when we shall be protected from our savage foes.

Your sincere friend,
W. B. D.

LETTER XXV.

Columbus, Texas,
December 25, 1841.

Dear Friend:—How true it is, that in this world the bitter is mixed with the sweet. I have often wondered and discussed within my own mind whether there is in this world more joy than sorrow. I am, for my own part, rather inclined to think them nearly equal. And is it not well that it is so? "Nature bestows not all her blessings upou one," and "In the midst of joy we are in sorrow" are sayings which the people of Texas are called upon to attest the truth of. I do not mean to complain, I know that we are blest far beyond our deserts. We are happy in living in one of the most delightful countries in the world. We have a government, the organization of which is nowhere surpassed. Kind neighbors and friends surround us. Improvements are still progressing and, for the past year, the sound of war has not disturbed us. With all these blessings methinks I hear you say, surely you ought to be happy. I acknowledge dear friend that so we ought to be, but there is ever in this world a something wanting; we cannot be perfectly happy.

Although surrounded with all the blessings which I have enumerated, this year, which is just fading into dim past, and will, ere long be forgotten and lost in the long vista of coming years, has been to us a year of hardships and trials. In the beginning of our revolution Congress issued a species of money called Texas Promissory Notes; these notes for a time were at par; but they at length commenced decreasing in value, little by little, till at the beginning of this year, they were worth not more than ten or twelve cents on the dollar. Those of us who had disposed of much of our property for this Texas money when it was at par have lost a great deal, and some have lost their all by its decrease in value. We are obliged to pay one hundred, or one hundred and fifty dollars for a barrel of flour, and other things are in like proportion. This, of course, causes a great deal of distress. In addition to this, our crops have fallen short this year on account of the dry season, so that we have often suffered greatly for want of food. We have been barely and scantily supplied with the necessaries of life; luxuries we have had none. But we long since became used to all these privations, and those of us who have been here in the first settlement of the country know well how to brave them; but the new settlers who have been brought up in ease and luxury at home, I sincerely pity; the hardships must necessarily seem very great to them. I hope some door will soon be opened for the relief of our distresses. I try to keep up good courage remembering that "faint heart ne'er won fair lady," but sometimes it does seem that there is no longer room for hope.

The seasons in this country are not as regular as they are in the United States. Drouths are very frequent. If a person plants early, he can generally succeed in raising a large crop; but if he does not plant till late, the dry season comes on, parches the ground, and ruins the crop. During the summer we have but little wet weather; the days are warm, though pleasant. By the first of April, the cold weather has entirely passed, and generally we have but little cold weather after the first of March. As early as possible in the season we plant our crops, say by the last of February or first of March. By that time every thing begins to look fresh and green, the grass springs forth, here and there may be seen lovely little flowers peeping forth from the silent earth, the leaves of trees begin to put forth; the dusky leaf of the evergreen live oak falls from its home on the tree, and its place is supplied by verdure fresh and new. You in the cold regions of the north, where nature never has sufficient time to unfold all her extensive wardrobe, can form no idea of the many gorgeous and splendid robes in which she here takes pleasure in decking herself. The foliage of the trees is much thicker and more beautiful than in the northern clime—the flowers of a deeper and gorgeous hue. In the spring of the year our prairies resemble a beautiful parterre. Texas is certainly richly adorned by nature, and I hope that the time will come when art too shall have lent her aid to deck this beautiful place.

Though the weather is so warm during the summer season, and the sun pours down his powerful rays, the heat is not oppressive. To be out in the sun where his rays have full force upon one, it of course can scarcely be endured; but in the shade it is cool and pleasant. The breezes from the south are refreshing and delightful. The nights during the summer, are more pleasant than in any country with which I am acquainted. About sun-down a cool delightful breeze springs up and soon the hot rarefied air becomes cool and pleasant. As night passes the air becomes still cooler, and before day the slumberer needs to draw his blanket round him to protect him from the cool breezes.

General Houston, on the second Monday of this month, was inaugurated President of the Republic of Texas. After his first term of service in that capacity had expired, he was succeeded in the Presidential chair by Gen. Mirabeau B. Lamar. Some of the principal events which occurred during Lamar's administration were the Cherokee war and the Santa Fe expedition. Of the success of the Cherokee war I have already informed you. The Santa Fe expedition was an entire failure. In the spring of this year, an armed force of about four hundred commanded by Cols. McCloud and Cook were sent into Santa Fe to take possession of that country and enforce the laws of the Texan Republic therein. They were much longer on the route than they had expected to be, and at length their provisions fell short; their sufferings were dreadful; many of them starved to death while the others managed to subsist on the flesh of their horses. At length, finding they should be unable to reach Santa Fe without they could obtain provisions, and that they were likely to meet with a repulse from the inhabitants, they sent Captain

Lewis into that country with an escort to see if he could obtain supplies for the army. When he arrived at Santa-Fe, instead of doing as he had been authorized to do, he gave the Mexicans information of the expedition, of their destitution, their numbers and the place of their encampment. He was informed that the army could receive no supplies from them, and would be obliged to surrender or fight their way into the country. He was now bribed by the Mexicans to counsel and advise the officers to surrender, telling they should be well treated, &c. The Mexicans promised Lewis a Colonel's commission in the Mexican army, and to respect all his private property. Lewis informed them that he had a wagon in the army which would be of value to him. The Mexicans immediately arranged their artillery and troops to massacre our army if they refused to surrender. On Lewis's return to the army, he was accompanied by the Governor of the country, the Alcalde, and a force of Mexicans. The Governor told the officers of the Texan army that they must surrender or force their way into the country; that if they would surrender and enter Santa Fe in a peaceable manner they should be supplied with plenty of provisions and be permitted to establish the Texan laws in that country. Lewis, faithful to the promise which he had made the Mexicans, exerted his influence with McCloud and Cook for them to surrender, telling them as they were short both of provisions and ammunition it would be useless for them to cope with so formidable a foe; he also pledged his honor to McCloud as a mason, (to which society both of them belonged) that what he told them was so. McCloud readily yielded to his solicitations; Cook long withstood them, preferring to force his way into the country, but was at length persuaded against his better-judgment by the representations of Capt. Lewis, and decided to surrender. As soon as our army had given up their arms, the Mexican forces were marched up, the Texans were tied two by two and marched as prisoners into Santa Fe. A meeting was then held to determine whether they should be sent to the Castle of Perote in the interior of Mexico, or be shot. Opinion was about equally divided; the Governor desired them to be shot, but a priest interfered in behalf of the Texans, and it was decided that they should be imprisoned. The Governor finding himself unable to succeed in his wishes, broke his sword and instantly gave up his commission. The Mexicans had our unfortunate army instantly put in irons and sent off to the Castle of Perote; on the way there, when any one of the men failed in strength and became unable to proceed, he was instantly shot. A more inhuman, barbarous proceeding than this I have never in my life known. The act was one well worthy of the savage ferocity of the untutored son of the forest.

After the prisoners had been sent from Santa Fe, Lewis made application for his commission and his property, but was informed by the Mexican authorities that a person of his character, who would betray his *own* countrymen could obtain no commission in their country; that he could only be protected by them during that night; that the Missouri traders were on the look out for him, and he would be obliged to leave the country. The property of the Texans was all confiscated, Lewis's pretended wagon with the rest.

Since I commenced this letter there has blown up a "Norther," and you must therefore excuse me if this letter becomes dry and uninteresting. You that know nothing of the northers of this country can scarce see why a person should become dull on account of the change of the weather. But we not only get dull, but often cross; everything is by general consent permitted to be so. Without, rages the biting blast and all looks gloomy; the air grows dark, the long moss as it sways to and fro in the wind, looks chilly and dreary; the sky assumes a leaden hue; all nature seems dark and gloomy; as the norther approaches, the cattle seek shelter in the bottoms, people who are without fly instantly to their houses, the rider in the open prairie wraps himself quickly in his blanket and quickens the speed of his horse.

These northers come up so suddenly as never to find one prepared for them. The day may be as warm and pleasant as a day in May; the warm southern breeze may have been playing and the sun pouring down his full warm rays, when suddenly the air darkens, and to the eye of a stranger, the clouds present the same appearance as before a heavy shower; soon a piercing coldness pervades the air, and perhaps in less than fifteen minutes the cold may be intense. These northers generally last about three days, sometimes longer, and then the weather again begins to moderate.

Yours truly,

W. B. D.

LETTER XXVI.

Columbus, Texas,
January 29, 1843.

DEAR FRIEND:—The troubles which we have anticipated with Mexico have broken out; we feared as she had never yet acknowledged our independence, that she did not intend doing so, but would again invade our country; yet we hoped as so long a season had passed without her making any attempt of the kind, that she would forget her animosity and leave us to enjoy the blessings of that peace for which we have fought and bled. Since the close of our war she has been torn with civil dissensions, and threatened with war by France. Her own Northern States have become disaffected, and we had fondly hoped that all these considerations would induce her at length to acknowledge our independence, and make us secure in our freedom. But at length the painful reality is open upon us! She does not intend to acknowledge our freedom. In March a large force under General Bascus entered San Antonio, obliged the inhabitants to evacuate the city, which was completely sacked. After which they immediately left the country.

On declaring our independence, courts were formed, and laws extended throughout our land. Last fall, in the month of September, court was in session at San Antonio de Bexar. The Mexican government being aware of this fact, sent in a strong armed force under

General Wall to destroy the town. The members of the court, judge, jury, lawyers, and all who were in attendance were taken prisoners; they resisted as long as they were able; but not being supplied with arms or a sufficient number of men to compete with so large a force, they were at last obliged to surrender. Before the news had time to reach the settlements, so that we could go to their assistance, they were marched off to the Castle of Perote and there imprisoned.

The news of this invasion soon spread through the country, and two hundred and twenty-five volunteers were readily raised who, commanded by Col. John H. Moore and Mr. Caldwell, marched to the Salado, five miles this side of San Antonio. They there encamped and sent Col. Hays with about eighty men to the town to draw the Mexicans out, the army being so small that they did not deem it prudent to march into town. Hays succeeded in drawing the whole army of the Mexicans from the town, and marched directly to the encampments on the Salado. Our army chose an advantageous position, namely, a deep ravine which run into the Salado, where they were protected by the banks of the stream and the timber. The Mexican army as it came up charged upon the Texans; this charge was answered by the Texans who cut down the Mexicans with great slaughter, and caused them to fall back. The Mexicans again came up and made several charges upon our force, but they being so well protected sustained but little injury; there was in the Mexican army a party of Cherokee Indians who charged upon our men, but as they soon lost their chief and a great many of their number, the survivors quickly fled. The Mexicans after making several charges, and having a great many of their men mowed down by the rifles of our army, at length ceased charging; upon this the Texans left the ravine and fell upon the Mexicans. A running fight now took place, in which the Texans still kept the advantage. The Texans then fell back to their old position in the ravine. The battle lasted two hours. About this time the Mexican spies discovered at about the distance of three miles, a company of men headed by Capt. Dawson, approaching to the assistance of Moore and Caldwell. The spies reported this to the commander who immediately sent a large part of his army, together with the four hundred cavalry and a piece of artillery to intercept them. They moved on till they met Dawson's men, whom they completely surrounded.

Dawson and his men seeing that they could not escape, resolved to sell their lives as dearly as possible. They fought bravely and killed a great many of the Mexicans, but at length they were overpowered by the numbers, and Dawson and all his men save eleven, were killed on the spot. The eleven were taken prisoners; one of them managed to make his escape by killing one of the horsemen with the butt of his gun, then running another through with his lance, he mounted a horse and escaped.

The Mexican army immediately after this retreated to San Antonio, and thence out of the country, pursued for a day or two by the Texans. Several skirmishes took place, but no particular engagement. After pursuing the Mexicans a day or two our army gave up the pursuit and returned to their homes.

In the fall Gen. Somerville at the head of an army of volunteers, started west for the purpose of invading Mexico. When he arrived at Loredo, situated on this side of the Rio Grande, he was informed that he was acting without orders from the Government. As soon as he learned this he informed his army that he had discovered that his orders to invade Mexico were not from the Government, and as there were no Mexican invaders in our country, nor anything for him to do at that place, he considered it the duty of himself and his men to return home. A part of the army refused to do this! General Somerville and the greater part of his army returned to their usual avocations, leaving the remainder at Loredo. After the return of Somerville, those who remained behind decided to cross the Rio Grande and invade Mexico. Under the command of Col. Fisher and Green, they crossed the Rio Grande, marched into Mier, and commenced an attack upon the town. They were all taken prisoners by the Mexican soldiers. As the soldiers were marching on with them to the Castle of Perote, the Texans thought they would make an attempt to break guard and escape. A perfect understanding was had among all the prisoners, of the time and manner in which the attempt was to be made. The time arrived, and they succeeded in escaping. A part of them were retaken, though a very few made their way back into Texas. The Mexican soldiers to punish them for this attempt to escape, decided that seventeen of them, which was one tenth of their number, should be shot. The whole number were compelled to draw beans from a hat containing one hundred and seventy beans, one tenth of which were black, and the rest white. Whoever drew a black bean was to be shot, and the remainder retained as prisoners. After the seventeen were shot, the rest were taken on to the Castle of Perote, not knowing what was to become of them, but most probably to linger out a long miserable existence in a dreary dungeon, and in a foreign land, with no friends near to cheer their lonely hours.

A request was made by those who were shot, that if possible their remains might be brought back to Texas and buried in Fayette county, on this river, as that was the place that most of them were from. I hope that this their dying request may some day be fulfilled, though at the present it would be utterly impossible, and I fear that at any time it would prove a hazardous enterprise.

What will be the next step which Mexico will take, it is impossible to conceive; but of this be assured, my dear friend, Texas will never submit to her despotic dominion. We consider ourselves a free people! We have fought for our freedom, and we will continue to fight if necessary, till the last drop of blood in our veins is wasted, but that we will be free. The lone star of Texas shall continue to wave proudly in the air as long as one brave Texan remains to defend it! We have suffered and bled in defence of our rights, and so we will ever do till the olive branch of peace shall overshadow our happy republic.

I am dear sir, sincerely yours,

W. B. D.

LETTER XXVII.

Columbus, Texas,
September 30, 1844.

Dear Friend:—You stated in your last that you had heard of a terrible overflow by which we were visited last year, and felt that it would be rather hazardous to come to a country where your buildings would be liable to be swept away by an inundation of the country. But, my dear friend, you do not reflect that at the distance you reside from here, it is not to be expected that the truth of the case will be apparent unless you obtain your information from one who knows and has witnessed the effects of an inundation. In order to relieve your mind, and correct the erroneous impressions which you seem to have formed, I will give you a general description of the overflows of this country. Like all other countries this of course is sometimes subject to high water; but it is less liable to be injured by high water than any country with which I am acquainted; the reason why it is less liable to be injured is this, an inundation is not of such frequent occurrence here as in many places. Our country is not visited as many are by an annual overflow, since there is no breaking up of ice in our streams, or melting of snow at their sources. There have been but three overflows since I have been in the country; and these have occurred regularly each ten years. The first was in 1823, the next year after my arrival in the country; the next was in 1833, and the last in 1843. From the fact that they have been regular so far, that is since we have known the country, we are inclined to suppose that it will be inundated every tenth year. The overflows have been at such seasons of the year that we have sustained but little injury. In 1823 it occurred the last of January or first of February; at that time our crops were not planted and we sustained no injury at all. The overflow in 1833 occurred in May, then our crops were slightly damaged; in 1843 the overflow was in February, and no injury was then done, with the exception of drowning of stock. Our land has never been injured by the overflows; as the rivers rise the water spreads over the land, and in place of forming a running stream and washing away the soil it stands still, and as it passes off leaves a sediment from three to six inches in depth upon the ground, which improves and enriches the land. The Trinity and Brazos rivers rise slowly, spread over the land and remain standing eight or ten days; but the Colorado and Gandulupe are different, they rise rapidly and as soon as they have got to their height they begin to fall, leaving no pools or stagnant water in the bottoms. They never remain at high water mark more than six hours.

You inquired of me about the crops in this country. The sugar crop is always good; Texas stands among the first as a sugar growing country. The cotton crops are excellent; the bottom lands yield on an average from two to three thousands pounds of cotton to the acre; the prairie land from fifteen hundred to two thousand pounds to the acre. An average crop of corn, take the country through, is forty bushels to the acre;

some lands produce much more, and some less. A man with the same force can raise as much produce on the prairie land as the bottom land. The reason is this, the prairie land is so much more easily tilled, that one can take care of nearly as much again of it as they can of the bottom land. The land in this country does not have a tendency to wear out as in many countries. I know land that has been under cultivation for twenty years and still produces as good a crop as at first. Vines grow here luxuriantly: large crops of pumpkins, squashes, and melons may be raised, requiring no more care than to put the seeds into the ground; and in fact species of these vines spring up and grow spontaneously. The grape is indigenous to the soil, and vast quantities may be found in all parts of the country, with their long, slender, leafy vines twining around the trunks and branches of trees, from the midst of which depends the large clusters of the luscious fruit. Potatos grow in abundance, both sweet and Irish. I have seen it stated that the Irish potatoe when planted here becomes sweet; but this is not so. As fine crops of Irish potatos can be raised here as any where in the world.

Texas can scarcely be called a country for small grain, though oats grow here as full as in any part of the world. Wheat and rye do not do as well, particularly in the low country; but as high up as the Three Forks of the Trinity wheat grows luxuriantly. There is in truth nothing necessary to the support of man but that can be produced in Texas in abundance. Here may be seen sugar, cotton, tobacco, oats, wheat, rye, potatos, and vines, all growing in the same field; and the planter after viewing his field can turn his eyes to the prairie and behold his cattle sleek and fat, feeding on the rich grass, requiring no care from their owners, yet able to labor hard from morning till night.

Our triennial election for President of this Republic has just taken place. Anson Jones is to be our next President. He succeeds to the Presidential chair on the second Monday in December next.

The principal event that occurred during the administration of Gen. Houston was the Mexican invasion, which I wrote you about in my last. There were many other events which, though of considerable importance in themselves, might not afford you much interest, and I will forbear to mention them. The administration of Gen. Houston has been a happy one, and has proved him to be an able and successful ruler in time of peace. He is about to withdraw from the high office which he has successfully filled for many years, at a time when prosperity abounds, and the olive branch of peace waves proudly o'er our happy land.

But, by the by, I have some joyful intelligence to convey to you. Our men who were taken prisoners by the Mexicans, and lodged in the castle of Perote, have been released and returned to enjoy the blessings of liberty in their own happy homes. Who can imagine what must be their feelings of joy and happiness as they were permitted once more to mingle with the friends they have known and loved, and to view the scenes that were wont to gladden their hearts. They have long lingered and pined in a gloomy foreign dungeon, fearing that they would never again be permitted to behold their much loved friends, and ignorant of what adverse fate might await them. Then what joy it must have been to them to see the doors of their dungeon thrown open, and to hear the welcome tidings of their freedom proclaimed. And great is the joy of their friends to have them once more with them and to feel that those whom they feared were forever lost to liberty and freedom, are again enjoying the blessings of that liberty for which they have exposed their lives.

What are your feelings in regard to the annexation of Texas to the United States? Throughout this Republic, the greatest excitement prevails; many are violently opposed to the measure, while others are warm advocates for annexation. For my own part, I am very much in favor of it and sincerely hope 'twill be brought about. I think it will prove a great advantage to our country; nor shall we come empty-handed into the sisterhood of States. We have as yet but a small population but it is fast increasing; and I expect at some future day, that ours will be a densely populated country. We are surrounded by all the blessings which peace and liberty can afford, besides having a country whose resources for wealth are inexhaustible, and peopled with energetic and enterprising citizens. With all these blessings we cannot impoverish the United States if we enter her family; and I do not think I am too proud in saying that the lone star of Texas will shine forth as a star of the first magnitude, on being admitted into the glorious constellation of the United States.

I am, my dear friend, yours affectionately,

W. B. D.

LETTER XXVIII.

Columbus, Texas,
November 12, 1845.

Dear Friend:—Happy am I in being able to claim you as a resident of a sister State. I could not have supposed that I should have felt myself nearer my early home on account of the annexation of Texas into the United States; yet, nevertheless, 'tis so. What a tie it is to be governed by the same rulers, to have a share in the same interests; now the breezes of prosperity which fan you in your dear native land, fan us also in this beautiful land of our adoption. We shall henceforth mourn together over any national calamity which may afflict our happy Republic, and in the season of prosperity, we are moved by the same joys. We are no longer aliens from our native country, but, after having been tossed about by the storms of war in a foreign home, we have been accepted again with all the relations we have since formed, into the bosom of our parent country. Truly we have reason to be happy! to rejoice over the prosperity which we enjoy! We are blest with health, with friends, with delightful homes, with peace and happiness, and united once more by the strong tie of national sympathy to all that we ever loved.

As you of course know the Congress of the United States, on the first day of last March, passed a joint resolution for the annexation of Texas into the Union. Then the Congress of the Republic of Texas passed a resolution giving their consent to the annexation of Texas to the United States, which was approved on the 23d day of June.

Delegates were elected to assemble at Austin on the fourth day of July to accept the proposals of the United States Congress. Meetings were held in each county instructing the delegates on the subject of annexation. In the county of Colorado, we met together, raised a flag on which were blended together the emblems of the United States and Texas; namely, the American Eagle setting proudly erect above the stars and stripes with one lone star in his beak which he was about dropping among the stars of the United States. As the flag was raised to its height on the lofty liberty pole, a strong south-western breeze blew out its folds in the direction of the Republic to which we were so soon to be joined. That day was to us a proud one, and we gazed with delight upon the bright stars and stripes of the nation's flag, and rejoiced that so soon our own lone star would take its place among the sister stars of a glorious constellation.

Our delegates, in convention assembled at Austin, in the name and by the authority of the people of Texas, on the fourth day of July last accepted the proposals contained in the resolutions of the Congress of the United States providing for the annexation of Texas into that Union. A new Constitution for the State of Texas was then framed and adopted. A copy of this Constitution I will here insert.

Constitution of the State of Texas.

We the people of the Republic of Texas, acknowledging with gratitude the grace and beneficence of God in permitting us to make a choice of our form of Government, do, in accordance with the provisions of the joint Resolution for annexing Texas to the United States, approved March first, one thousand, eight hundred, and forty-five, ordain and establish this Constitution:

Article I.—*Bill of Rights.*

That the general, great, and essential principles of liberty and free government may be recognized and established, we declare that—

SECTION 1. All political power is inherent in the people, and all free governments are founded on their authority, and instituted for their benefit; and they have at all times the unalienable right to alter, reform, or abolish their form of government in such manner as they may think expedient.

SEC. 2. All freemen, when they form a social compact, have equal rights; and no man, or set of men, is entitled to exclusive separate public emoluments or privileges but in consideration of public services.

SEC. 3. No religious test shall ever be required as a qualification to any office or public trust in this State.

SEC. 4. All men have a natural and indefeasible right to worship God according to the dictates of their own consciences. No man shall be compelled to attend, erect, or support any place of worship, or to maintain any ministry against his consent; no human authority ought, in any case whatever, to control or interfere with the rights of conscience in matters of religion; and no preference shall ever be given by law to any religious society or mode of worship. But it shall be the duty of the Legislature to pass such laws as (may) shall be necessary to protect every religious denomination in the peaceable enjoyment of their own mode of public worship.

SEC. 5. Every citizen shall be at liberty to speak, write, or publish his opinion on any subject, being responsible for the abuse of that privilege, and no law shall have the right to control the liberty of speech or of the press.

SEC. 6. In prosecutions for the publication of papers investigating the official conduct of officers or men in public capacity, or when the matter published is proper for public information, the truth thereof may be given in evidence; and in all indictments for libels, the jury shall have the right to determine the law and the facts under the direction of the courts, as in other cases.

SEC. 7. The people shall be secure in their persons, houses, papers, and possessions, from all unreasonable seizures or searches; and no warrant to search any place or to seize any person or thing shall issue without describing them as near as may be, nor without probable cause supported by oath and affirmation.

SEC. 8. In all criminal prosecutions, the accused shall have a speedy public trial by an impartial jury; he shall not be compelled to give evidence against himself, he shall have the right of being heard by himself or counsel, or both, shall be confronted with the witnesses against him, and shall have compulsory process for obtaining witnesses in his favor, and no person shall be holden to answer for any criminal charge, but on indictment or information, except in cases arising in the land or naval forces, or offences against the laws in regulating the militia.

SEC. 9. All prisoners shall be bailable by sufficient sureties, unless for capital offences, when the proof is evident, or the presumption great; but this provision shall not be construed so as to prohibit bail after indictment found upon an examination of the evidence by a Judge of the Supreme or District Court upon the return of the (a) writ of *habeas corpus*, returnable in the county where the offence is committed.

SEC. 10. The privileges of the writ of *habeas corpus* shall not be suspended, except when in case of rebellion, or invasion, the public safety may require it.

SEC. 11. Excessive bail shall not be required nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel, nor unusual punishment inflicted. All Courts shall be open, and every person, for an injury done him in his lands, goods, person, or reputation, shall have remedy by due course of law.

SEC. 12. No person, for the same offence, shall be twice put in jeopardy of life or limb, nor shall a person be again put upon trial for the same offence, after a verdict of not guilty; and the right of trial by jury shall remain inviolate.

SEC. 13. Every citizen shall have the right to keep and bear arms in the lawful defence of himself or the State.

SEC. 14. No bill of attainder, *ex post facto* law, retroactive laws, or any law impairing the obligations of contracts shall be made, and no person's property shall be taken or applied to public use, without adequate compensation being made, unless by the consent of such person.

SEC. 15. No person shall ever be imprisoned for debt.

SEC. 16. No citizen of the state shall be deprived of life, liberty, property, or privileges, outlawed, exiled, or in any manner disfranchised, except by due course of law of the land.

SEC. 17. The military shall, at all times be subordinate to the civil authority.

SEC. 18. Perpetuities and monopolies are contrary to the genius of a free government, and shall never be allowed; nor shall the law of primogeniture or entailments ever be in force in this state.

SEC. 19. The citizens shall have the right, in a peacable manner to assemble together for their common good, and to apply to those invested with the power of Government, for the redress of grievances, or other purposes, by petition, address, or remonstrance.

SEC. 20. No power of suspending laws in this State shall be exercised, except by the Legislature or its authority.

SEC. 21. To guard against transgressions of the high powers herein designated, we declare that every thing in this Bill of Rights is excepted out of the general powers of government, and shall forever remain inviolate, and all laws contrary thereto or the following provisions shall be void.

Article II.—*Division of the Powers of Government.*

Sec. 1. The Powers of Government of the State of Texas shall be divided into three distinct departments, and each of them be confided to a separate body of magistracy, to wit: those which are Legislative to one, those which are Executive to another, and those which are Judicial to another, and no person or collection of persons being of one of those departments, shall exercise any power properly attached to either of the others except in the instances herein expressly permitted.

Article III.—*Legislative Department.*

Sec. 1. Every free male person who shall have attained the age of twenty-one years, and who shall be a citizen of the United States, or who is at the time of the adoption of this Constitution by the Congress of the United States, a citizen of the Republic of Texas, and shall have resided in this State one year next preceding an election, and the last six months within the district, county, city, or town in which he offers to vote (Indians not taxed, Africans, and descendants of Africans excepted) shall be deemed a qualified elector; and should such qualified elector happen to be in any other county situated in the district in which he resides at the time of an election, he shall be permitted to vote any where in the State for State officers, and provided further that no soldier, seaman, or marine in the army or navy of the United States shall be entitled to a vote at any election created by this Constitution.

Sec. 2. All free male persons over the age of twenty-one years (Indians not taxed, Africans, and descendants of Africans excepted) who shall have resided six months in Texas, immediately preceding the acceptance of this Constitution by the Congress of the United States, shall be deemed qualified electors.

SEC. 3. Electors in all cases shall be privileged from arrest during their attendance at elections, and in going to and returning from the same, except in cases of treason, felony, or breaches of peace.

SEC. 4. The Legislative powers of this State shall be vested in two distinct branches; the one to be styled the Senate, and the other the House of Representatives, and both together, the Legislature of the State of Texas. The style of the (all) laws shall be, Be it enacted by the Legislature of the State of Texas.

SEC. 5. The members of the House of Representatives shall be chosen by the qualified electors, and their term of office shall be two years from the day of the general election, and the session of the Legislature shall be triennial, at such times as shall be prescribed by law.

SEC. 6. No person shall be a Representative unless he be a citizen of the United States or, at the time of the adoption of this Constitution, a citizen of the Republic of Texas, and shall have been an inhabitant of this State two years next preceding his election, and the last year thereof a citizen of the county, city, or town for which he shall be chosen, and have attained the age of twenty-one years, at the time of his election.

SEC. 7. All elections by the people shall be held at such time and place in the several counties, cities, or towns as are now, or may hereafter be, designated by law.

SEC. 8. The Senators shall be chosen by the qualified electors, for the term of four years, and shall be divided by lot into two classes (as) nearly equal as can be; the seats of the Senators of the first class shall be vacated at the expiration of the first two years, and of the second class at the expiration of four years, so that one half thereof shall be chosen biennially thereafter.

Sec. 9. Such mode of classifying new additional Senators shall be observed as will as nearly as possible, preserve an equality of members in each class.

Sec. 10. When a senatorial district shall be composed of two or more counties, it shall not be separated by any county belonging to another district.

Sec. 11. No person shall be a Senator unless he is a citizen of the United States, or at the time of the acceptance of this Constitution by the Congress of the United States, a citizen of the Republic of Texas, and shall have been an inhabitant of this State three years next preceding the election, and the last year thereof a resident of the district for which he shall be chosen, and have attained the age of thirty years.

Sec. 12. The House of Representatives when assembled shall elect a speaker and its other officers, and the Senate shall choose a President for the time being, and its other officers; each house shall judge of the qualifications and elections of its own members, but contested elections shall be determined in such manner as shall be directed by law; two-thirds of each house shall constitute a quorum to do business, but a smaller number may adjourn from day to day and compel the attendance of absent members in such manner and under such penalties as each House may provide.

Sec. 13. Each House may determine the rules of its own proceedings, punish members for disorderly conduct, and, with the consent of two-thirds, expel a member, but not a second time for the same offence.

Sec. 14. Each House shall keep a journal of its own proceedings, and publish the same; and the yeas and nays of the members of either House on any question shall, at the desire of any three members present, be entered on the journals.

Sec. 15. When vacancies happen in either House, the Governor, or the person exercising the power of the Governor, shall issue writs of election to fill such vacancies.

Sec. 16. Senators and Representatives shall in all cases, except in treason, felony, or breach of the peace, be privileged from arrest during the session of the Legislature, and in going to and returning from the same, allowing one day for every twenty miles such member may reside from the place at which the Legislature is convened.

Sec. 17. Each House may punish by imprisonment during the session, any person not a member, for disrespectful or disorderly conduct in its presence, or for obstructing any of its proceedings; provided such imprisonment shall not at any one time exceed forty-eight hours.

Sec. 18. The doors of each House shall be kept open.

Sec. 19. Neither House shall, without the consent of the other, adjourn for more than three days; nor to any other place than that in which they may be sitting, without the concurrence of both Houses.

SEC. 20. Bills may originate in either House, and be amended, altered, or rejected by the other; but no bill shall have the force of a law, until on three several days it be read in each House, and free discussion be allowed thereon, unless, in case of great emergency, four-fifths of the House in which the bill shall be pending, may deem it expedient to dispense with this rule; and every bill passing both Houses shall be signed by the Speaker and President of their respective Houses.

SEC. 21. All bills for raising revenue shall originate in the House of Representatives, but the Senate may amend or reject them as other bills.

SEC. 22. After a bill or resolution has been rejected by either branch of the Legislature, no bill or resolution containing the same substance, shall be passed into a law during the same session.

SEC. 23. Each member of the Legislature shall receive from the public Treasury a compensation for his services, which may be increased or diminished by law; but no increase of compensation shall take place during the session at which such increase shall be made.

SEC. 24. No Senator or Representative shall, during the term for which he may be elected, be eligible to any civil office of profit under this State, which shall have been created, or the emoluments of which may have been increased during such term; and no member of either House of the Legislature shall, during the term for which he is elected be eligible to any office or place, the appointment to which may be made in whole or in part, by either branch of the Legislature; nor shall the members thereof be capable of voting for a member of their own body for any office whatever, except it be in such cases as are herein provided. The President for the time being of the Senate, and Speaker of the House of Representatives, shall be elected from their respective bodies.

SEC. 25. No Judge of any court of law or equity, Secretary of State, Attorney-General, Clerk of any court of record, Sheriff, or Collector, or any person holding a lucrative office under the United States or this State, or any foreign government, shall be eligible to the Legislature; nor shall at the same time hold or exercise any two offices, agencies, or appointments of trust or profit under this State; provided that officers of the militia, to which there is attached no annual salary, or the office of Justice of the Peace, shall not be deemed lucrative.

SEC. 26. No person who at any time may have been a Collector of taxes, or who may have been otherwise entrusted with public money, shall be eligible to the office of Legislature, or to any office of profit or trust under the State Government, until he shall have obtained a discharge for the amount of such collections, and for all public moneys for which he may have [been] entrusted.

SEC. 27. Ministers of the Gospel being by their profession dedicated to God, and the care of souls, ought not to be diverted from the great duties of their functions; therefore no Minister of the Gospel, or Priest of any denomination whatever, shall be eligible to the Legislature.

SEC. 28. Elections for Senators or Represenatives, shall be general throughout the State, and shall be regulated by law.

SEC. 29. The Legislature shall at their first meeting, and in the year one thousand eight hundred and forty-eight and fifty, and every eight years thereafter, cause an enumeration to be made of all the free inhabitants, (Indians not taxed, Africans and descendants of Africans excepted) of the State, designating particularly, the number of qualified electors; and the whole number of Representatives shall be fixed by the Legislature, and apportioned among the several counties, cities, or towns, according to the number of free population in each; and shall not be less than forty-five, nor more than ninety.

SEC. 30. Until the first enumeration and apportionment under this Constitution, the following shall be the apportionment of Representatives amongst the several counties, viz:

The county of Montgomery shall elect four Representatives; the counties of Red river, Harrison, Nacogdoches, Harris, and Washington, shall elect three Representatives each; the counties of Fannin, Lamar, Bowie, Shelby, San Augstine, Rusk, Houston, Sabine, Liberty, Robertson, Galveston, Brazoria, Fayette, Colorado, Austin, Gonzales, and Bexar two Representatives each; the counties of Jefferson, Jasper, Brasos, Milam, Bastrop, Travis, Matagorda, Jackson, Fort Bend, Victoria, Refugio, Goliad, and San Patricio one Representative each.

SEC. 31. The whole number of Senators shall at the next session, after the several periods of making the enumeration be fixed by the Legislature, and apportioned among the several districts to be established by law, according to the number of qualified electors, and shall never be less than nineteen, nor more than thirty-three.

SEC. 32. Until the first enumeration as provided for by this Constitution, the Senatorial districts shall be as follows, to-wit: the counties of Fannin and Lamar shall constitute the first district, and shall elect one Senator; the counties of Red River and Bowie the second district, and elect one Senator; the counties of Fannin, Lamar, Red River, and Bowie conjointly, shall elect one Senator; the county of Harrison, the third district, shall elect one Senator; the counties of Nacogdoches, Rusk, and Houston, the fourth district, shall elect two Senators; the counties of San Augustine and Shelby, the fifth district, shall elect one Senator; the counties of Sabine and Jasper, the sixth district, shall elect one Senator; the counties of Liberty and Jefferson, the seventh district, shall elect one Senator; the counties of Robertson and Brazos, the eight district, shall elect one Senator; the county of Montgomery, the ninth district, shall elect one Senator; the county of Harris, the tenth district, shall elect one Senator; the county of Galveston, the eleventh district, shall elect one Senator; the counties of Brazoria and Matagorda, the twelfth district, shall elect one Senator; the counties of Austin and Fort Bend, the thirteenth district, shall elect one Senator; the counties of Colorado and Fayette, the fourteenth district, shall elect one Senator; the counties of Bastrop and Travis, the fifteenth district, shall elect one Senator; the counties of Washington and Milam, the sixteenth district, shall elect one Senator; the counties of Victoria, Gonzales, and Jackson, the seventeenth district, shall elect one Senator; the county of Bexar, the eighteenth district, shall elect one Senator; and the counties of Goliad, Refugio, and San Patricio, the nineteenth district, shall elect one Senator.

SEC. 33. The first session of the Legislature, after the adoption of this Constitution by the Congress of the United States, shall be held at the city of Austin, the present seat of government, and thereafter until the year one thousand eight hundred and fifty; after which period the seat of government shall be permanently located by the people.

SEC. 34. The members of the Legislature shall at their first session, receive from the Treasury of the State, as their compensation, three dollars for each day they shall be in attendance, and three dollars for every twenty-five miles traveling to and from the place of convening the Legislature.

SEC. 35. In order to settle permanently the seat of government, an election shall be held throughout the State, at the usual place of holding elections, on the first Monday in March, one thousand eight hundred and fifty; which shall be conducted according to law, at which time the people shall vote for such place as they may see proper for the seat of government. The returns of said election to be transmitted to the Governor by the first Monday in June: if either place voted for shall have a majority of the whole number of votes cast, then the same shall be the permanent seat of government until the year one thousand eight hundred and seventy, unless the State sooner be divided. But in case neither place voted for shall have the majority of the whole number of votes given, then the Governor shall issue his proclamation for an election, to be holden in the same manner, on the first Monday in October, one thousand eight hundred and fifty, between the two places having the highest number of votes at the first election. The election shall be conducted in the same manner as at first, and the returns made to the Governor, and the place having the highest number of votes, shall be the seat of government for the time herein before provided.

Article IV.—*Judicial Department.*

SECTION 1. The Judicial power of this State shall be vested in one Supreme Court, in District Courts, and in Inferior Courts as the Legislature may from time to time ordain and establish; and such jurisdiction may be vested in corporation courts as may deemed necessary, and be directed by law.

SEC. 2. The Supreme Court shall consist of a Chief Justice and two Associates, any two of whom shall be a quorum.

SEC. 3. The Supreme Court shall have appellate jurisdiction only, which shall be coextensive with the limits of the State; but in criminal cases and from appeals from interlocutory judgments, with such exceptions, and under such regulations as the Legislature shall make. And the Supreme Court and Judges thereof shall have power to issue writs of *habeas corpus*, and under such regulations as may be prescribed by law, may issue writs of *mandamus*, and such other writs as shall be necessary to enforce its own jurisdiction, and also compel a Judge of the District Court to proceed to trial and judgment in a cause. And the Supreme Court shall hold its sessions once every year, between the months of October and June inclusive: at not more than three places in the State.

SEC. 4. The Supreme Court shall appoint its own Clerks, who shall hold their offices for four years, and be subject to removal by the said court for neglect of duty, misdemeanor in office, and such other causes as may be prescribed by law.

SEC. 5. The Governor shall nominate, and, by and with the advice and consent of two-thirds of the Senate, shall appoint the Judges of the Supreme and District Courts, and they shall hold their offices for six years.

SEC. 6. The State shall be divided into convenient judicial districts. For each district there shall be elected, [appointed] a Judge, who shall reside in the same, and hold the Courts at one place in each county, and at least twice in each year, in such manner as may be prescribed by law.

SEC. 7. The Judges of the Supreme Court shall receive a salary not less than two thousand dollars annually, and the Judges of the District Court a salary not less than seventeen hundred and fifty dollars annually, and the salary of the Judges shall not be increased or diminished during their continuance in office.

SEC. 8. The Judges of the Supreme and District Courts, shall be removed by the Governor on the address of two-thirds of each House of the Legislature, for willful neglect of duty, or other reasonable cause which shall not be sufficient ground for impeachment: provided, however, that the cause or causes for which such removal be required, shall be stated at length in such address, and entered on the journals of each House: and, provided further, that the cause or causes shall be notified to the Judge so intended to be removed, and he shall be admitted to a hearing in his own defence before any vote for such address shall passed; and in all such cases the vote shall be taken by yeas and nays, and entered on the journals of each House respectively.

Sec. 9. All Judges of the Supreme and District Courts shall by virtue of their offices be conservatives of the peace throughout the State. The style of all writs and process shall be "The State of Texas." All prosecutions shall be carried on in the name, and by the authority of the "State of Texas," and conclude "against the peace and dignity of the State."

Sec. 10. The District Court shall have original jurisdiction of all criminal cases, of all suits in behalf of the State, to recover penalties, forfeitures, and escheats, and of all cases of divorce, and of all suits, complaints, and pleas whatever, without regard to any distinction between law and equity, when the matter in controversy shall be valued at or amount to one hundred dollars, exclusive of interest; and the said Courts or the Judges thereof, shall have power to issue all writs necessary to enforce their own jurisdiction, and to give them a general superintendence and control over inferior jurisdictions. And in the trial of all criminal cases the jury trying the same shall find and assess the amount of punishment to be inflicted or fine imposed; except in capital cases, and where the punishment or fine imposed shall be specifically imposed by law.

SEC. 11. There shall be a Clerk of the District Courts for each county, who shall be elected by the qualified voters for members of the Legislature, and who shall hold his office for four years, subject to removal by information or by presentment of a grand jury, and conviction by a petit jury. In case of vacancy, the Judge of the district shall have the power to appoint a Clerk until a regular election can be held.

SEC. 12. The Governor shall nominate, and with the advice and consent of two-thirds of the Senate, appoint an Attorney General, who shall hold his office for two years, and there shall be elected by joint vote of both Houses of the Legislature a District Attorney for each district, who shall hold his office two years; and the duties, salaries, and perquisites of the Attorney General and District Attorneys shall be prescribed by law.

SEC. 13. There shall be appointed for each county a convenient number of Constables, who shall hold their offices for two years, to be elected by the qualified voters of the district or county as the Legislature may direct. Justices of the Peace, Sheriffs, and Coroners shall be commissioned by the Governor. The Sheriffs shall not be eligible more than four years in every six.

SEC. 14. No Judge shall sit in any case wherein he may be interested, or where either of the parties may be connected with him by affinity or consanguinity, within such degrees as may be prescribed by law, or where he shall have been of counsel in the cause.

When the Supreme Court or any two of its members shall be thus disqualified to hear and determine any cause or causes in said Court, by reason of the equal division of opinion of said Judges, the same shall be certified to the Governor of the State, who shall immediately commission the requisite number of persons learned in the law, for the trial and determination of said cases. When the Judges of the District Court are thus disqualified, the parties may, by consent, appoint a proper person to try the said case, and the Judges of the said courts may exchange districts, or hold courts for each other when they may deem it expedient, and shall do so when directed by law.

Sec. 15. Inferior tribunals shall be established in each county for appointing guardians, granting letters testamentary and of administration; for settling the accounts of executors, administrators, and guardians, and for the transaction of business appertaining to estates; and the District Courts shall have appellate jurisdiction and general control over the said inferior tribunals, and original jurisdiction and control over executors, administrators, guardians, and minors, under such regulations as may be prescribed by law.

Sec. 16. In the trial of all causes in equity in the District Court, the plaintiff or defendant, shall, upon application made in open court, have the right of trial by jury, to be governed by the rules and regulations prescribed in trials at law.

Sec. 17. Justices of the Peace shall have such civil and criminal jurisdiction as shall be prescribed by law.

Sec. 18. In all causes arising out of a contract before any inferior judicial tribunal, when the amount in controversy shall exceed ten dollars, the plaintiff or defendant shall upon application to the presiding officer, have the right of trial by jury.

SEC. 19. In all cases where Justices of the Peace or other judicial officers of inferior tribunals, shall have jurisdiction in the trial of causes, where the penalty for the violation of a law is fine or imprisonment (except in cases of contempt), the accused shall have the right of trial by jury.

Article V.—*Executive Department.*

SECTION 1. The supreme executive power of this State shall be vested in the Chief Magistrate, who shall be styled the Governor of the State of Texas.

SEC. 2. The Governor shall be elected by the qualified electors of the State at the time and places of elections for members of the Legislature.

SEC. 3. The returns of every election for Governor, until otherwise provided by law, shall be made out, sealed up and transmitted to the Seat of Government, and directed to the Speaker of the House of Representatives, who shall during the first week of the session of the Legislature thereafter, open and publish them in the presence of both Houses of the Legislature; the person having the highest number of votes, and being constitutionally eligible, shall be declared by the Speaker, under the direction of the Legislature, to be Governor, but if two or more persons shall have the highest and have an equal number of votes, one of them shall be immediately chosen Governor by joint vote of both Houses of the Legislature. Contested elections for

Governor shall be determined by both Houses of the Legislature.

SEC. 4. The Governor shall hold his office for the term of two years from the regular time of installation, and until his successor shall be duly qualified, but shall not be eligible for more than four years in any term of six years; he shall be at least thirty years of age, shall be a citizens of the United States, or a citizen of the State of Texas at the time of the adoption of this Constitution, and shall have resided in the same three years immediately preceding his election.

SEC. 5. He shall at stated times receive a compensation for his services, which shall not be increased or diminished during the term for which he shall have been elected. The first Governor shall receive an annual salary of two thousand dollars and no more.

SEC. 6. The Governor shall be Commander-in-chief of the army and navy of this State, and of the militia, except when they shall be called into the service of the United States.

SEC. 7. He may require information in writing, from the officers of the Executive Department on any subject relating to the duties of their respective offices.

SEC. 8. He may by proclamation, on extraordinary occasions, convene the Legislature at the Seat of Government, or at a different place if that should be in the actual possession of a public enemy. In case of disagreement between the two Houses with respect to adjournment, he may adjourn them to such time as he shall think proper, not beyond the day of the next regular meeting of the Legislature.

SEC. 9. He shall from time to time communicate to the Legislature information, in writing, of the state of the Government, and recommend to their consideration such measures as he may deem expedient.

SEC. 10. He shall take care that the laws be faithfully executed.

SEC. 11. In all criminal cases, except in those of treason and impeachment, he shall have power, after conviction, to grant reprieves and pardons; and under such rules as the Legislature may prescribe, he shall have power to remit fines and forfeitures. In cases of treason, he shall have power by and with the advice and consent of the Senate to grant reprieves and pardons, and he may, in the recess of the Senate, respite the sentence until the end of the next session of the Legislature.

SEC. 12. There shall also be a Lieutenant Governor who shall be chosen at every election for Governor, by the same persons and in the same manner, continue in office for the same time, and possess the same qualifications. In voting for Governor and Lieutenant Governor the electors shall distinguish for whom they vote as Governor, and for whom as Lieutenant Governor. The Lieutenant Governor shall by virtue of his office be President of the Senate, and have, when in committee of the whole, a right to debate and vote on all questions, and when the Senate is equally divided, to give the casting vote. In case of the death, resignation, removal from office, inability, or refusal of the Governor to serve, or of his impeachment or absence from the State, the Lieutenant Governor shall exercise the powers and authority appertaining to the office of Governor until another be chosen at the periodical election, and be duly qualified, or until the Governor impeached, absent, or disabled, shall be acquitted, return, or his disability be removed.

SEC. 13. Whenever the government shall be administered by the Lieutenant Governor, or he shall be unable to attend as President of the Senate, the Senate shall elect one of their own members as President for the time being. And if during the vacancy of the office of Governor, the Lieutenant Governor shall die, resign, refuse to serve, or be removed from office, or be unable to serve, or if he shall be impeached or absent from the State, the President of the Senate for the time being, shall in like manner administer the government until he shall be superseded by a Governor or Lieutenant Governor. The Lieutenant Governor shall, whilst he acts as President of the Senate, receive for his services the same compensation which shall be allowed to the Speaker of the House of Representatives and no more, and during the time he administers the government as Governor, shall receive the same compensation which the Governor would have received had he been employed in the duties of his office, and no more. The President for the time being of the Senate shall, during the time he administers the government, receive in like manner the same compensation which the Governor would have received, had he been employed in the duties of his office. If the Lieutenant Governor shall be required to administer the government, and shall whilst in such administration die, resign, or be absent from the State during the recess of the Legislature, it shall be the duty of the Secretary of State to convene the Senate for the purpose of choosing a President for the time being.

SEC. 14. There shall be a seal of the State, which shall be kept by the Governor, and used by him officially. The said seal shall be a star of five points, encircled by an olive and live oak branches, and the words, "The State of Texas."

SEC. 15. All commissions shall be in the name and by the authority of the State of Texas, be sealed with the State seal, signed by the Governor, and attested by the Secretary of State.

SEC. 16. There shall be a Secretary of State, who shall be appointed by the Governor, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, and shall continue in office during the term of service of the Governor elect. He shall keep a fair register of all official acts and proceedings of the Governor, and shall, when required, lay the same and all papers, minutes, and vouchers relative thereto before the Legislature, or either House thereof, and shall perform such other duties as may be required of him by law.

SEC. 17. Every bill which shall have passed both Houses of the Legislature shall be presented to the Governor, if he approve, he shall sign it; but if not he shall return it with his objections to the House in which it shall have originated, who shall enter the objections at large upon the journals and proceed to reconsider it; if after such reconsideration, two-thirds of the members present shall agree to pass the bill, it shall be sent with the objections to the other House, by which it shall likewise be re-considered; if approved by two-thirds of the members present of that House it shall become a law; but in such cases the votes of both Houses shall be determined by yeas and nays, and the names of the members voting for or against the bill shall be entered on the journals of each House respectively; if any bill shall not be returned by the Governor within five days, Sundays excepted, after it shall have been presented to him, the same shall be a law in like manner as if he had signed it. Every bill presented to the Governor one day previous to the adjournment of the Legislature, and not returned to the House in which it originated before its adjournment shall become a law, and have the same force and effect as if signed by the Governor.

SEC. 18. Every order, resolution or vote, to which the concurrence of both Houses of the Legislature may be necessary, except on questions of adjournment, shall be presented to the Governor, and before it shall take effect be approved by him, or being disapproved, shall be repassed by both Houses according to the rules and limitations prescribed in the case of a bill.

SEC. 19. The Governor, by and with the advice and consent of two-thirds of the Senate, shall appoint a convenient number of Notaries Public, not exceeding six for each county, who, in addition to such duties as are prescribed by law, shall discharge such other duties as the Legislature may from time to time prescribe.

SEC. 20. Nominations to fill all vacancies that may have occurred during the recess, shall be made to the Senate during the first ten days of its session. And should any nomination so made be rejected, the same individual shall not again be nominated during the session to fill the same office. And should the Governor fail to make nominations to fill any vacancy during the session of the Senate, such vacancy shall not be filled by the Governor until the next meeting of the Senate.

SEC. 21. The Governor shall reside during the session of the Legislature, at the place where the sessions may be held, and at all times, whenever, in their opinion, the public good may require.

SEC. 22. No person holding the office of Governor, shall hold any office or commission, civil or military.

SEC. 23. A State Treasurer and Comptroller of public accounts shall be biennially elected, by the joint ballot of both Houses of the Legislature, and in case of vacancy in either of said offices, during the recess of the Legislature, such vacancy shall be filled by the Governor, which appointment shall continue until the close of the next session of the Legislature thereafter.

Article VI.—*Militia.*

SECTION 1. The Legislature shall provide by law for organizing and disciplining the militia of this State, in such manner as they shall deem expedient, not incompatible with the Constitution and laws of the United States in relation thereto.

SEC. 2. Any person who conscientiously scruples to bear arms, shall not be compelled to do so but shall pay an equivalent for personal services.

SEC. 3. No licensed Minister of the Gospel shall be required to perform military duty, work on roads, or serve on juries in this State.

SEC. 4. The Governor shall have power to call forth the militia to execute the laws of the State, to suppress insurrections and repel invasions.

Article VII.—*General Provisions.*

SECTION. 1. Members of the Legislature, and all officers, before they enter upon the duties of their offices, shall take the following oath or affirmation: "I, (A. B.), do solemnly swear (or affirm) that I will faithfully and impartially, discharge and perform, all the duties incumbent on me, as ———, according to the best of my skill and ability, agreeably to the Constitution and laws of the United States and of this State: And I do further solemnly swear (or affirm), that since the adoption of this Constitution by the Congress of the United States, I being a citizen of this State, have not fought a duel with deadly weapons, within this State nor out of it, nor have I sent or accepted a challenge to fight a duel with deadly weapons, nor have I acted as second in carrying a challenge, or aided, advised, or assisted any person thus offending, so help me God.'

SEC. 2. Treason against this State shall consist only in levying war against it, or in adhering to its enemies—giving them aid and comfort; and no person shall be convicted of treason unless on the testimony of two witnesses to the same overt act, or his own confession in open court.

SEC. 3. Every person shall be disqualified from holding any office of trust or profit in this State, who shall have been convicted of having given or offered a bribe to procure his election or appointment.

Sec. 4. Laws shall be made to exclude from office, serving on juries, and from the right of suffrage, those who shall hereafter be convicted of bribery, perjury, forgery, or other high crimes. The privilege of free suffrage shall be supported by laws regulating elections, and prohibiting, under adequate penalties, all undue influence thereon from power, bribery, tumult, or other improper practice.

Sec. 5. Any citizen of this State, who shall, after the adoption of this Constitution, fight a duel with deadly weapons or send or accept a challenge to fight a duel with deadly weapons, either within the State or out of it, or who shall act as second, or knowingly aid and assist, in any manner those thus offending, shall be deprived of holding any office of trust or profit under this State.

Sec. 6. In all elections by the people, the vote shall be by ballot, until the Legislature shall otherwise direct; and in all elections by the Senate and House of Representatives, jointly or separately, the vote shall be given *viva voce*, except in the election of their officers.

Sec. 7. The Legislature shall provide by law for the compensation of all officers, servants, agents, and public contractors, not provided for by this Constitution, and shall not grant extra compensation to any officer, agent, servant, or public contractor after such public service shall have been performed, or contract entered into for the performance of the same; nor grant by appropriation or otherwise, any amount of money out of the Treasury of the State, to any individual, on a claim real or pretended, where the same shall not have been provided for by pre-existing law: Provided, that nothing in this section shall be so construed as to affect the claims of persons against the Republic of Texas, heretofore existing.

SEC. 8. No money shall be drawn from the Treasury, but in pursuance of specific appropriations made by law; nor shall any appropriation of money be made for a longer term than two years, except for purposes of education; and no appropriation for individual or private purposes, or for purposes of internal improvement, shall be made without the concurrence of two-thirds of both Houses of the Legislature. A regular statement and account of the receipts and expenditures of all public money shall be published annually in such manner as shall be prescribed by law. And in no case shall the Legislature have power to issue "Treasury Warrants," "Treasury Notes," or paper of any description intended to circulate as money.

SEC. 9. All civil officers shall reside within the State; and all district or county officers within their districts or counties; and shall keep their offices at such places therein, as may be required by law.

SEC. 10. The duration of all offices not fixed by this Constitution, shall never exceed four years.

SEC. 11. Absence on the business of this State, or of the United States, shall not forfeit a residence once obtained, so as to deprive any one of the right of suffrage, or of being elected or appointed to any office under the exceptions contained in this Constitution.

SEC. 12. The Legislature shall have power to provide for deductions from the salaries of public officers, who may neglect the performance of any duty that may be assigned them by law.

SEC. 13. No member of Congress, nor person holding or exercising any office of profit or trust under the United States or either of them, or under any foreign power, shall be eligible as a member of the Legislature, or hold or exercise any office of profit or trust under this State.

SEC. 14. The Legislature shall provide for a change of venue in civil and criminal cases; and for the erection of a Penitentiary at as early a day as practicable.

SEC. 15. It shall be the duty of the Legislature to pass such laws as may be necessary and proper to decide differences by arbitration, when the parties shall elect that method of trial.

SEC. 16. Within five years after the adoption of this Constitution, the laws, civil and criminal, shall be revised, digested, arranged, and published in such a manner as the Legislature shall direct, and a like revision, digest, and publication, shall be made every ten years thereafter.

SEC. 17. No lottery shall be authorized by this State; and the buying or selling of lottery tickets within this State is prohibited.

SEC. 18. No divorce shall be granted by the Legislature.

SEC. 19. All property, both real and personal of the wife, owned or claimed by her before marriage, and that acquired afterwards by gift, devise, or descent, shall be her separate property; and laws shall be passed more clearly defining the rights of the wife, in relation as well to her separate property as that held in common with her husband. Laws shall also be passed providing for the registration of the wife's separate property.

SEC. 20. The rights of property and of action, which have been acquired under the Constitution and laws of the Republic of Texas, shall not be divested; nor shall any rights or actions which have been divested, barred, or declared null and void, by the Constitution and laws of the Republic of Texas, be re-invested, revis[v]ed, or reinstated by this Constitution; but the same shall remain precisely in the situation which they were before the adoption of this Constitution.

SEC. 21. All claims, locations, surveys, grants, and titles to land, which are declared null and void by the Constitution of the Republic of Texas, are, and the same shall, remain forever null and void.

SEC. 22. The Legislature shall have power to protect by law from forced sale, a certain portion of the property of all heads of families. The homestead of a family, not to exceed two hundred acres of land, (not included in a town or city), or any town or city lot or lots in value, not to exceed two thousand dollars, shall not be subject to forced sale, for any debts hereafter contracted, nor shall the owner, if a married man, be at liberty to alienate the same, unless by the consent of the wife, in such manner as the Legislature may hereafter point out.

SEC. 23. The Legislature shall provide in what cases officers shall continue to perform the duties of their offices, until their successors shall be duly qualified.

SEC. 24. Every law enacted by the Legislature, shall embrace but one object, and that shall be expressed in the title.

SEC. 25. No laws shall be revised or amended by reference to its title; but in such case the act revised, or section amended, shall be re-enacted and published at length.

SEC. 26. No person shall hold or exercise more than one civil office of emolument, except that of Justice of the Peace.

SEC. 27. Taxation shall be equal and uniform throughout the State. All property in this State shall be taxed in proportion to its value, to be ascertained as directed by law, except such property as two-thirds of both Houses of the Legislature may think proper to exempt from taxation. The Legislature shall have power to lay an income tax, and to tax all persons pursuing any occupation, trade, or professions; provided that the term occupation shall not be construed to apply to pursuits, either agricultural or mechanical.

SEC. 28. The Legislature shall have power to provide by law for exemption from taxation, two hundred and fifty dollars worth of the household furniture or other property belonging to each family in this State.

SEC. 29. The Assessor and Collector of taxes shall be appointed in such manner, and under such regulations, as the Legislature may direct.

SEC. 30. No corporate body shall hereafter be created, renewed, or extended with banking or discounting principles.

SEC. 31. No private corporation shall be created, unless the bill creating it shall be passed by two-thirds of both Houses of the Legislature, and two-thirds of the Legislature shall have power to revoke and repeal all private corporations by making compensation for franchise. And the State shall not be part owners of the stock or property belonging to any corporation.

SEC. 32. The Legislature shall prohibit by law individuals from issuing bills, checks, promissory notes, or other paper to circulate as money.

SEC. 33. The aggregate amount of debts hereafter contracted by the Legislature, shall never exceed the sum of one hundred thousand dollars, except in case of war to repel invasion or suppress insurrection, and in no case shall any amount be borrowed, except by a vote of two-thirds of both Houses of the Legislature.

SEC. 34. The Legislature shall at the first session thereof, and may at any subsequent session, establish new counties for the convenience of the inhabitants of such new county or counties, provided that no new county shall be established which shall reduce the county or counties, or either of them, from which it shall be taken, to a less area than nine hundred square miles, (except the county of Bowie), unless by consent of two-thirds of the Legislature, nor shall any county be laid off of less contents. Every new county as to the right of suffrage and representation, shall be considered as part of the county or counties from which it was taken, until entitled by number to the right of separate representation.

SEC. 35. No soldier shall, in time of peace, be quartered in the house, or within the inclosure of any individual, without the consent of the owner; nor in time of war, but in a manner prescribed by law.

SEC. 36. The salaries of the Governor and Judges of the Supreme and District Courts are hereby fixed at the minimum established in the Constitution, and shall not be increased for ten years.

Mode of amending the Constitution.

SEC. 37. The Legislature, whenever two-thirds of each House shall deem it necessary, may propose amendments to this Constitution, which proposed amendments shall be duly published in the public prints of the State at least three months before the next general election of the Representatives, for the consideration of the people; and it shall be the duty of the several returning officers at the next election, which shall thus be holden to open a poll for, and make a return to the Secretary of the State of the names of all those voting for representatives who have voted on such proposed amendments, and if thereupon, it shall appear that a majority of all the citizens of this State voting for Representatives, have voted in favor of such proposed amendments, and two-thirds of each House of the next Legislature shall, after such election and before another ratify the same amendments by yeas and nays, they shall be valid to all intents and purposes as part of this Constitution, provided that the said proposed amendments shall at each of the said sessions have been read on three several days in each House.

Article VIII.—*Slaves.*

SEC. 1. The Legislature shall have no power to pass laws for the emancipation of slaves, without the consent of their owners, nor without paying their owners previous to such emancipation, a full equivalent in money for the slaves so emancipated; they shall have no power to prevent emigrants to the State from bringing with them such persons as are deemed slaves by the laws of the United States, so long as any person of the same age or description shall be continued in slavery by the laws of this State; provided that such slaves be the bona fide property of such emigrants; provided also that laws be passed to inhibit the introduction into this State, of slaves who have committed high crimes in states or territories; they shall have the right to pass laws to permit the owners of slaves to emancipate them, saving the rights of creditors, and preventing them from becoming a public charge; they shall have full power to pass laws which will oblige the owners of slaves to treat them with humanity, to provide for their necessary food and clothing, to abstain from all injuries to them extending to life or limb, and, in case of their neglect or refusal to comply with the directions of such laws, to have such slave or slaves taken from such owners and sold for the benefit of such owner or owners; they may pass laws to prevent slaves from being brought into this State as merchandise only.

SEC. 2. In the prosecution of slaves for crimes of a higher grade than petit larceny, the Legislature shall have no power to deprive them of an impartial trial by a petit jury.

SEC. 3. Any person who shall maliciously dismember or deprive a slave of life shall suffer such punishment as would be inflicted in case the like offence had been committed upon a free white person, and on the like proof except in case of insurrection of such slave.

Article IX.—*Impeachment.*

Sec. 1. The power of impeachment shall be vested in the House of Representatives.

Sec. 2. Impeachments of the Governor, Lieutenant Governor, Attorney General, Secretary of the State, Treasurer, Comptroller, and of the Judges of the District Courts, shall be tried by the Senate.

Sec. 3. Impeachments of Judges of the Supreme Court shall be tried by the Senate. When setting as a court of impeachment, the Senators shall be upon oath or affirmation, and no person shall be convicted without the concurrence of two-thirds of the Senators present.

Sec. 4. Judgment in cases of impeachment shall extend only to removal from office, and disqualifications from holding any office of honor, trust, or profit under this State; but the parties convicted shall, nevertheless, be subject to indictment, trial, and punishment according to law.

Sec. 5. All officers against whom articles of impeachment may be preferred, shall be suspended from the exercise of the duties of their office during the pending of such impeachment; the appointing power may make a provisional appointment to fill the vacancy occasioned by the suspension of an officer until the decision on impeachment.

Sec. 6. The Legislature shall provide for the trial, punishment, and removal from office of all other officers of the State by indictment or otherwise.

Article X.—Education.

SEC. 1. A general diffusion of knowledge being essential to the preservation of the rights and liberties of the people, it shall be the duty of the Legislature of this State to make suitable provision for the support and maintainance of Public Schools.

SEC. 2. The Legislature shall, as early as practicable, establish free schools throughout the State, and shall furnish means for their support by taxation of property; and it shall be the duty of the Legislature to set apart not less than one tenth part of the annual revenue of the State, derivable from taxation, as a perpetual fund; which fund shall be appropriated to the support of free public schools, and no law shall ever be made diverting said funds to any other use, and until such time as the Legislature shall provide for the establishment of such schools in the several districts of the State, the fund thus created shall remain as a charge against the State passed to the credit of the free common school fund.

SEC. 3. All public lands which have been heretofore, or which may hereafter be granted, for public schools to the various counties or other political divisions in this State shall not be alienated in full, nor disposed of otherwise than by lease for a time not exceeding twenty years, in such manner as the Legislature may direct.

SEC. 4. The several counties in this State, which have not received their quantum of lands for the purpose of education, shall be entitled to the same quantity heretofore appropriated by the Congress of the Republic of Texas to other counties.

Article XI.

SEC. 1. All certificates for head-right claims to land issued to fictitious persons, or which were forged, and all locations and surveys thereon, are, and the same were null and void from the beginning.

SEC. 2. The District Court shall be opened until the first day of July, one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven, for the establishment of certificates for head-rights not recommended by the commissioners appointed under the act to detect fraudulent land-certificates, and to provide for issuing patents to legal claimants, and the parties suing shall produce the like proof and be subjected to the requisitions which were necessary and were prescribed by law to sustain the original application for the said certificates; and all certificates above referred to, not established or sued upon before the period limited shall be barred and the said certificates, and all locations and surveys thereon shall be for ever null and void, and all relocations made on such surveys shall not be disturbed until the certificates are established as above directed.

Article XII.—*Land Office.*

SEC. 1. There shall be one general land office in the State which shall be at the seat of Government where all titles which have heretofore emanated or may hereafter emanate from Government shall be registered and the Legislature may establish from time to time such subordinate offices as they may deem requisite.

Article XIII.—*Schedule.*

SEC. 1. That no incovenience may arise from a change of separate natural (national) government to a State government, it is declared that all process which shall be issued in the name of the Republic of Texas prior to the organization of the State Government, unless under this Constitution, shall be as valid as if issued in the name of the State of Texas.

SEC. 2. The validity of all bonds and recognizances executed in conformity with the Constitution and laws of the Republic of Texas shall not be impaired by the change of government, but may be sued for and recovered in the name of the Governor of the State of Texas, and all criminal prosecutions or penal actions which shall have arisen prior to the oganization of the State Government under this Constitution, in any of the courts of the Republic of Texas shall be prosecuted to judgment and execution in the name of said State. All suits at law and equity which may be depending in any of the courts of the Republic of Texas prior to the organization of the State Government under this Constitution shall be transferred to the proper court of the State which shall have jurisdiction of the subject matter thereof.

SEC. 3. All laws and parts of laws now in force in the Republic of Texas, which are not repugnant to the Constitution of the United States, the joint resolutions for annexing Texas to the United States, or to the provisions of this Constitution, shall continue to remain in force, as the laws of this State, until they expire by their own limitation or shall be altered or repealed by the Legislature thereof.

SEC. 4. All fines, penalties, forfeitures, and escheats which have accrued to the Republic of Texas under the

Constitution and laws, shall accrue to the State of Texas; and the Legislature shall, by law, provide a method for determining what lands may have been forfeited or escheated.

SEC. 5. Immediately after the adjournment of this Convention, the President of the Republic shall issue his proclamation, directing the Chief Justices of the several counties of this Republic, and the several Chief Justices and their Associates are hereby required to cause polls to be opened in their respective counties, at the established precincts on the second Monday of October next, for the purpose of taking the sense of the people of Texas in regard to the adoption or rejection of this Constitution, and the votes of all persons entitled to vote under the existing laws of this Constitution shall be received. Each voter shall express his opinion by declaring a "*viva voce*" for "the Constitution accepted," or "the Constitution rejected," or some words clearly expressing the intention of the voter; and at the same time the vote shall be taken in like manner for and against annexation. The election shall be conducted in conformity with the existing laws regulating elections, and the Chief Justices of the several counties shall carefully and promptly make duplicate returns of said polls, one of which [shall] be transmitted to the Secretary of State of the Republic of Texas and the other deposited in the Clerk's office of the County Court.

SEC. 6. Upon the receipt of the said returns, or on the second Monday in November next, if the returns be not sooner made, it shall be the duty of the President, in presence of such officers of his cabinet as may be present, and of all persons who may choose to attend, to compare the votes given for the ratification or rejection of this Constitution, and if it should appear from the returns that a majority of all the votes given, is for the adoption of this Constitution, then it shall be the duty of the President to make proclamation of that fact and thenceforth this Constitution shall be ordained and established as the Constitution of this State, to go into operation, and be of force and effect, from and after the organization of the State Government under this Constitution; and the President of this Republic is authorised and required to transmit to the President of the United States duplicate copies of this Constitution, properly authenticated, together with certified statements of the number of votes given for the ratification thereof, and the number for rejection; one of which copies shall be transmitted by mail, and one copy by special messenger, in sufficient time to reach the seat of Government of the United States, early in December next.

SEC. 7. Should this Constitution be accepted by the people of Texas, it shall be the duty of the President on or before the second Monday in November next, to issue his proclamation directing and requiring elections to be holden in all the counties of this Republic on the third Monday in December next for the office of Governor, Lieutenant Governor, members of the Senate and House of Representatives of the State Legislature, in accordance with the apportionment of Representatives directed by the Constitution. The returns for members of the Legislature of this State, shall be made to the

Department of State of this Republic and those for Governor and Lieutenant Governor, shall be addressed to the Speaker of the House of Representatives endorsed "Election Returns of ——— County for Governor," and directed to the Department of State; and should, from any cause whatever, the Chief Justices of counties fail to cause to be holden any of the polls or election provided for by this Constitution at the the times and places herein directed, the people of the precincts where such failure exists, are hereby authorised to choose managers, judges, and other officers to conduct said elections.

SEC. 8. Immediately on the President of this Republic receiving official information of the acceptance of this Constitution by the Congress of the United States, he shall issue his proclamation convening at an early day the Legislature of the State of Texas at the seat of Government established under this Constitution, and after the said Legislature shall have organised, the Speaker of the House of Representatives shall, in presence of both branches of the Legislature, open the returns of the elections for Governor and Lieutenant Governor, who shall forthwith be installed in their respective offices, and the Legislature shall proceed as early as practicable, to elect Senators to represent this State in the Senate of the United States; and also provide for the election of Representatives to the Congress of the United States. The Legislature shall also adopt such measures as may be required to cede to the United States at the proper time, all public edifices, fortifications, barracks, ports, harbors, navy and navy-yards, docks, magazines, arms and armaments, and all other property and means pertaining to the public defence, now belonging to the Republic of Texas; and to make the necessary preparations for transferring to the said United States, all custom houses and other places for the collection of impost duties and other foreign revenues.

Sec. 9. It shall be the duty of the President of Texas, immediately after the inauguration of the Governor, to to deliver to him all records, public money, documents, archives, and all public property of every description whatever, under the control of the executive branch of the Government; and the Governor shall dispose of the same in such manner as the Legislature may direct.

Sec. 10. That no inconvenience may arise from the change of Government, it is declared that the laws of this Republic relative to the duties of officers, both military and civil, of the same, shall remain in full force, and the duties of their several offices shall be performed in conformity with the existing laws until the organization of the Government of the State, under this Constitution, or until the first day of the meeting of the Legislature. That then the offices of President, Vice President, Members of the President's Cabinet, Foreign Ministers, Charges and agents, and others repugnant to this Constitution, shall be superseded by the same, and that all others shall be holden and exercised until they expire by their own limitation, or be suspended by the authority of this Constitution, or laws made in pursuance thereof.

Sec. 11. In case of any disability on the part of the President of the Republic of Texas to act as herein required, it shall be the duty of the Secretary of State of the Republic of Texas, and in case of any disability on the part of the Secretary of State, then it shall be the duty of the Attorney General of the Republic of Texas, to perform the duties assigned to the President.

SEC. 12. The first general election for Governor, Lieutenant Governor, and members of the Legislature, after the organization of the Government, shall take place on the first Monday in November, one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven, and shall be held biennially thereafter on the first Monday in November until otherwise provided by the Legislature. And the Governor and Lieutenant Governor, elected in December next, shall hold their offices until the installation in office of the Governor and Lieutenant Governor to be elected in the year one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven.

SEC. 13. The ordinance passed by the Convention on the fourth day of July, assenting to the overtures for the annexation of Texas to the United States, shall be attached to this Constitution and form a part of the same.

Done in Convention by the Deputies of the people of Texas at the city of Austin, this twenty-seventh day of August, in the year of our Lord, one thousand, eight hundred and forty-five. In testimony whereof we have hereunto subscribed our names.

THOS. J. RUSK, *President.*

John D. Anderson, James Armstrong, Cavitt Armstrong, B. C. Bagby, R. E. B. Baylor, R. Bache,

J. W. Brashear, Geo. Wan. Brown, Jas. M. Burrough, Jno. Caldwell, William L. Cazeneau, Edward Clark, A. S. Cunningham, Phil. M. Cuny, Nicholas Darnell, James Davis, Lemuel Dale Evans, Gustavus A. Everts, Robert M. Forbes, David Gage, J. Hemphill, J. Pinckney Henderson, A. W. O. Hicks, Jos. L. Hogg, A. C. Horton, Volney E. Howard, Spearman Holland, Wm. L. Hunter, Van R. Irion, Henry J. Jewett, Oliver Jones, H. L. Kinney, Albert H. Latimer, Henry R. Latimer, John M. Lewis, James Love, P. O. Lumpkin, Sam. Lusk, Abner S. Lipscomb, James S. Mayfield, A. McGowan, Archibald M'Neill, J. B. Miller, Francis Moore, Jr., J. Antonio Navarro, W. B. Ochiltree, Isaac Parker, James Power, Emery Rains, H. G. Runnels, James Scott, Geo. W. Smyth, Israel Standefer, Chas. Bellinger Stewart, E. H. Tarrant, Isaac Van Zandt, Francis M. White, George J. Wood, George W. Wright Wm. Cock Young.

Attest, JAMES H. RAYMOND,
Secretary of the Convention.

We the people of Texas have been wonderfully blessed. A short time, 'tis true, we suffered from the iron arm of despotism; but compared with the time that the United States groaned in bondage ere she achieved her independence, it was indeed short. The reign of tyranny over, we established a happy republican form of Government, under which we were prospered and blessed; now we are citizens of the United States, and I have no reason to fear but that we shall still be blessed. Here, on this soil, we have fought and bled in

Freedom's holy cause, we have lighted the torch of liberty and now we are permitted to sit down in its light surrounded by comfort and happiness. And when these worn-out frames shall decay and crumble into dust we shall bequeath to our children a rich legacy, the blessings of American Liberty.

Yours, truly,

W. B. D.

LETTER XXIX.

Columbus, Texas,
March 3, 1847.

Dear Friend:—Many thanks for your last kind letter, and still more for the pleasing information that your sons were about to come to this State. Active, enterprising men we are rejoiced to see, and care not how many of them we have the pleasure of welcoming to Texas. Many are coming in every year, but there is still room for more. Your sons will, without doubt, do well in this country, and I trust they will soon be on with all the friends they may see fit to bring along with them.

You inquired of me to what part of the country I would advise settlers to come. Before I answer that question I must ask what occupation the settler intends following. Our country is happily suited to every occupation. If one wishes to cultivate sugar-cane, the part of the country where I would advise him to settle, lies between the coast and the thirtieth degree of north latitude, that being by far the best adapted to the cultivation of sugar cane. From the thirtieth to the thirty-third degree is particularly adapted to the cultivation of cotton and all kinds of small grain. Indian corn flourishes in every section of the country.

From Austin to the Three Forks of the Trinity and thence to the Cross Timbers on Red river, the country is excellent for the cultivation of wheat; I do not suppose there is any where in this world a region superior to this for wheat, or better adapted to this grain. Oats might almost be said to be a natural production of the country, as they grow in all parts of it, and are remarkably fine and heavy.

Potatos, turnips, beets, and radishes, are raised in all parts of Texas, and to a larger size than in any land I have ever known. Perhaps there is no place in the world where vines grow as luxuriantly as here. You would hardly credit me were I to tell you to what size pumpkins and melons grow in this country.

Tobacco may be raised in all parts of Texas, and as finely flavored as the Cuban tobacco. It does not grow as heavy as in Virginia, but it is more finely flavored, and better for making cigars, especially if planted in the black, sandy prairie.

The average amount of produce to the acre is as follows: sugar, three thousand pounds, cotton from fifteen hundred to three thousand pounds, according to the soil in which it is planted, Indian corn from thirty to eighty bushels, small grain, from thirty to sixty bushels, tobacco, fifteen hundred pounds and frequently more, the second crop being nearly equal to the first. We have no use for meadows, as our prairies afford us the best kind of hay; when the season for cutting hay arrives, we go out into the prairies, select a place where the cattle have not been, and we are enabled to cut as much as we wish.

Perhaps it would be desirable for me to tell you the season for planting our crops; sugar should be planted in March. It is unnecessary to plant it but once in four years. The first of January is the best time to sow oats; with other small grain it depends upon the quality. Indian corn should be planted between the first and the twentieth of March. Cotton from the twentieth of March to the fifteenth of April. By using a little care and attention, gardens may be kept flourishing nearly all the year. Turnips ought to be sowed in September. The best time for sowing tobacco seed is the first of January. Sweet potatos are here cultivated in a different manner from what they are in any other country which I have ever visited. We bed out our seed potatos in March; we draw the slips, cut the vines, and set them out all summer. The first crop of Irish potatos should be planted in February.

The most profitable business which a person can follow in this country is stock-raising; especially if he has but a small force. A poor man can probably make a living here more easily than in any other country; but still if he would turn his attention to stock-raising he would find it far more profitable; for this reason, in the parts of Texas which are suited to the raising of cattle, land is cheap, and to farm successfully one needs good land, which, at the present time, is worth from five to ten dollars for the acre. In the north-west part of Texas, which, by the by, is the part for raising stock, land can be obtained for from fifty cents to one dollar an acre. A man can start with a very small capital and make a fortune by sitting still and letting it grow upon him. For instance, a hundred head of stock-cattle can be purchased for three hundred dollars; all the labor that is necessary is to get them up in the spring, mark and brand the calves, and keep them gentle. They are always fat and the number doubles every year; a heifer at two years of age, and indeed sometimes at eighteen months, may be considered a cow. Now make a calculation, and you will find that in ten years you will have a stock of cattle which is a small fortune in itself. Beeves are always worth ten dollars at home.

Horse-raising is no less profitable than raising other stock. Fine Spanish mares may be obtained for ten dollars a piece. Two hundred dollars would be sufficient to purchase a cavayard of twenty. You can then raise horses worth from fifty to one hundred dollars a piece; so you have an increase of fifteen hundred dollars a year from two hundred dollars capital, and this at no expense except the trouble of branding and herding them.

A man can raise any quantity of hogs in this country by simply feeding them sufficiently to keep them from growing wild. Pork is worth on an average, two dollars and a half a hundred. You can, nine years out of ten, kill your pork out of the woods; as we have such a variety of mast, there is almost always enough to fatten hogs. We have the post-oak acorn, the black-jack, the pin-oak, the live-oak, the over-cup, the burr-oak, the Spanish oak, the water-oak, and the white-jack acorns. Besides these, we have the pecan and the hickory nuts, the wild peach, the hack-berry, and grapes; all these the hogs feed upon.

I have known persons here to get wealthy by settling near a town and supplying customers with poultry, milk, and butter. A great many in this manner make a good living, and some have even become wealthy. There is no month in the year too cold for raising chickens.

This is also a fine country for raising sheep, and indeed sheep-raising is the most profitable business which can be followed. Mexican stock sheep can be obtained on the Rio-Grande for fifty cents per head; by bringing a few fine bucks from the States, you may in a few years be possessor of a fine, hardy flock of sheep, being at no further expense than keeping a shepherd to tend them. Sheep do not require the trouble that other stock does, one shepherd being able to take care of two thousand head with ease. The market for wool is not fluctuating like cotton and other produce. The profit on middling wool is greater than on fine, and a mongrel race is hardier than the fine sheep. A man can make as a great profit with two thousand dollars capital in sheep-raising as he can with twenty thousand in cotton planting.

If a person wishes to engage in merchandise, this country, I expect, opens the best field of any on the continent, and for different reasons; the facility of obtaining goods from all parts of the world is great; and almost every man in this country is able to pay his debts. A merchant can collect more closely here than in any country in which I have ever been. Besides this there being no manufactories in the country almost every thing we use we obtain from abroad, through the merchants.

Steady, industrious mechanics may be assured of success in Texas. Here also is a good opening for professional men. Every smart young lawyer whom I have ever known in this country, has become wealthy in a very short time, even though he had not a penny to start upon, provided he did not dissipate; but a dissipated person cannot succeed well here in business of any kind.

Physicians also will find this a good place to remove to, not that ours is a sickly country, but for other reasons; you know that skillful physicians are always useful in any land. It is pleasant for a physician to practice here, since the diseases are easily managed. The winter sickness is the most dangerous, it generally commences with a bad cold and terminates in pneumonia which, without great care, is liable to prove fatal. The summer diseases are mostly bilious and congestive fevers, which readily yield to proper care and attention.

Ministers of the gospel of every denomination are greatly needed here, since the harvest is great and the laborers are few.

I hope, my dear friend, that your sons will persuade many of their young friends to accompany them on their removal to Texas; and I would be glad if I might also have the pleasure of welcoming to Texas the friend of my early youth.

Sincerely yours,
W. B. D.

LETTER XXX.

Columbus, Texas,
January 8, 1850.

My Dear Friend:—

I am well aware that I owe you many apologies for my delinquency in writing; but family afflictions have gathered round me. I have passed through seasons of sorrow, which drew my attention from my surviving friends! I know that it is not right to give way to gloom and sorrow under any affliction of divine dispensation; but we poor, weak, erring mortals are ever prone to mourn over the afflictions which God in his providence sees fit to send upon us.

You asked me in your last if Texas was to me less pleasant, and less interesting than heretofore, that I had ceased to give you information concerning it. No, my dear friend, it is not that Texas is less delightful than formerly; the fault is my own! I feel that Time has laid his hand upon me! years have passed over me, and the enthusiasm of youth has passed away. Sorrow and hardships too have had their effect upon me and I am no longer the light-hearted youth with whom you were once acquainted. "I have learned to look on Nature not with the eye of thoughtless youthfulness;" my thoughts and my feelings have changed; but Nature remains the same. Texas, as I view the country now in my riper years, appears to me no less lovely than when I first beheld it in the freshness of my youth; but I view it with a different eye. The groves, the flowers, the sun-set scenes, and the soft, rosy clouds no longer enchain my attention as then; I still think them beautiful but a field of fine cotton will draw my attention from them. In fact I have passed the romantic season of youth and have awakened to the stern and sober realities of life.

This country has improved much more rapidly than I ever, even in my most sanguine moments, foresaw. We have been blest far beyond our deserts! Prosperity and plenty have abounded! We need want for nothing; all that is necessary for our comfort and happiness is to be found at our very doors! wealth has flowed into our coffers, and we have nothing for which to mourn. The bright day of Texas has dawned! the sound of the fife and drum is no longer heard beating the march to the battle-field; no longer is heard the booming of cannons or the approach of the foe. When we lay our heads upon our pillows at night we do it feeling that we are at peace and in safety. The lonely traveler in the broad prairie no longer fears that he shall be cut off by the wily savage before he has reached his journey's end.

Who could have foreseen the changes through which we have passed within the short space of thirty years. Thirty years ago our country was the abode of Indians and wild beasts. The foot of civilization had never trod these flowery plains. The white man came in and little villages sprung up; plantations were cleared and cultivated, and civilization began to move in an onward course. For several years there was but a mere handful of us here to till the soil and enjoy the delights which our country affords; but soon the inducements which this flowery garden offered to adventurers began to be noised abroad, and the tide of emigration from that time became strong. Enterprising men who had lost their fortunes in the old States came to Texas to make another. The resources of Texas were heard of in the old world, and large numbers of Irish and Germans fleeing from destitution at home sought an asylum in this abode of peace and plenty.

In the year of 1835, the population of this country amounted to about ten thousand. At the present time, the population amounts to one hundred and ninety thousand. They are a mixture of Americans, Germans, Irish, Mexicans, French, English, and Scotch. And in fact, nearly every nation in Europe has its representatives here. The Germans in population amount to twenty-five thousand, the Mexicans to ten thousand, the Irish one thousand, French five hundred, English two hundred, Scotch five hundred, and Americans one hundred and fifty-three thousand.

Being such a motley crew, we of course draw our manners and customs from every nation; each one following ways of his own, and doing as seems right in his own eyes. The Germans and Americans seem to keep themselves aloof from each other, and as they move along on the stormy sea of life, each of them seems in heart to say of the other, "Approach not unto me, but keep thou in thy place for I am better than thou."

The cause of education prospers. Much has been done for the advancement of education by the people of this State; schools have been established, school-houses built, and competent and faithful teachers employed to enlighten and instruct the minds of the rising generation. Every person is interested in this great cause, and we are determined that our children shall be educated.

Churches have also been established, and the sound of the gospel has spread through our land. Fifteen years ago the preaching of the gospel by a Protestant minister was forbidden; the Roman Catholic being the established religion of Mexico. No marriage ceremony was legal unless performed by a priest, and no religion but that of the Roman Catholic was tolerated. I was in this country fifteen years before I ever heard a sermon. Now the sound of the gospel is heard throughout the length and breadth of our land; we have Christians of all denominations; devout men of fervent piety have come into the country to tell us the glad tidings of a Saviour's advent.

Divisions of the Sons of Temperance have been organized in almost every village in this State. This has proved to us a great blessing! Where once resounded the coarse language and the brutal laugh of the inebriate, it is still and quiet. We feel that the bright day of temperance is dawning, and that soon myriads of worthless sots will be gathered under the banner of temperance, and become valuable and respected citizens. King Alcohol is the most powerful foe that remains for us to conquer, and we have reason to hope that his reign will from henceforth be of short duration.

I remain now as ever,
Your affectionate friend,
W. B. D.

AFTER having copied the foregoing letters, it occurred to me, as the state of society was constantly advancing that it would add much interest to this work, if I could obtain from the pen of the author some information of Texas as it is in 1852. I, therefore, addressed to him a letter, solicting the information, which I will here give together with his reply.

Lexington, Ky.,
January 15, 1852.

MR. W. B. D.—

DEAR SIR:—You doubtless recollect that some months since, leave was sought and obtained from you for the publishment of letters addressed by you to a friend in this State. The work is now nearly ready for the press, but before it goes, I shall consider it a great favor if you would write me concerning the prosperity of your country, from the date of your last letter (January, 1850), up to the present time. Changes are without doubt rapidly taking place in Texas, which would be of interest to the world. All appear anxious to know as much as possible of the affairs of Texas, both present and past. I am very happy that I have your leave to give your knowledge of the past history of Texas to the public; and if you will give some knowledge of your present prosperity, you will much oblige one who will ever be mindful of the favor.

Yours, with respect,

MR. W. B. D. CARA CARDELLE.

LETTER XXXI.

Columbus, Texas,
February 3, 1852.

RESPECTED MISS:—Your favor of the 15th ult. is at hand. I will, with pleasure, grant your request. The task is one upon which I scarce know how to commence. The advancement of our country within the past two years, has been so great, that it is almost beyond the power of pen to give an accurate account of it. Since the date of my last letter to my friend, the population of Texas has nearly doubled. Emigrants have flocked hither from all parts of the world; our rich river lands that heretofore have been a refuge for wild beasts, are now in a fine state of cultivation; the produce now made for exportation is nearly double what it was then. The progress of our internal improvements is truly flattering. Our beautiful water-courses are now navigated with great success, and we have charters for several railroads, some of which are now in rapid progress.

The advancement of the morality of our country can hardly be expressed; our towns and villages were ten years ago the scene of intemperance and bloodshed. There was to be found the gambler with his bowie-knife and pistols, roaming about seeking whom he might devour; in his place may now be seen the sober, pious farmer, the steady merchant, the minster of the gospel, and the professor of religion. The contrast can better be seen and felt than described; every thing appears to be in a flourishing and prosperous condition.

Our Legislature during the last session, have passed an act, granting to each county in the State, one half of the State tax in addition to the county tax, to be expended for county purposes. This will enable us to have public buildings erected, and also to advance the cause of education. The facilities for education are improving much faster than one could in his most sanguine moments have expected. We have colleges under the direction of all Christian denominations throughout the length and breadth of our country.

Money and wealth of all kinds have been brought into our State, so that Texas is among the richest countries in the world. Peace, tranquility, and plenty abound in the land. "Our swords have been beat into plowshares, and our spears into pruning hooks." Ours is truly a country favored of the Lord, and we have reason to rejoice in our prosperity.

Respectfully yours,

W. B. D.

BRIGHT'S FAMILY PRACTICE.

A PLAIN SYSTEM
OF
MEDICAL PRACTICE,
FOR
THE USE OF FAMILIES.

By J. W. BRIGHT, M.D.

This work embraces all the diseases of Men, Women, and Children, and a plain system of MIDWIFERY; and contains the experience of the Author, in more than thirty years extensive practice of Medicine, and is the only work now before the public which contains all the New and Approved Remedies, found in the standard works and medical periodicals in Europe and America, together with the experience and approved practice of the best authors, upon which the successful treatment of the present forms of disease so much depends. It is the only work now before the public, containing a full description of the new, as well as the old diseases of the United States. The Symptoms of each disease, in all its stages, are so minutely described, and the directions for giving and working off the medicines are so plain, that no one can fail to follow them; the remedies all being put down in plain English, in their appropriate places. It also contains a *Family Materia Medica*, with Receipts for preparing all the Family Medicines in common use, with directions how to use them, and about thirty plates, mostly of medicinal plants, with their description, medical properties, and uses. Recipes for preparing Tooth Powders, Cologne Waters, and Medicines for Cleansing and Beautifying the Skin, and many other recipes, useful to Farmers and Mechanics: recipes for preparing and using the remedies for the cure of the Poisons of *Arsenic, Copper, Lead. Mercury, Opium, Morphine, Gallic and Prussic Acids*; also, directions for preparing a variety of Diet for the Sick. The work is got up in the most fashionable style, with marble edges, and bound in fine leather, with spring back, especially for the use of families. The whole is contained in 941 royal octavo pages, and will be delivered to subscribers at *Five Dollars* per copy.

Recommendations from the Medical Faculty of the University of Louisville.

Louisville, August, 1847.

Dear Sir—Having bestowed on an attentive examination of your "FAMILY PRACTICE" all the leisure I can command, I am of the opinion that, with the addition of the word well, which I shall take the liberty of making, I cannot better characterize it than you yourself have done, in your very modest and appropriate title-page, "A Plain System of Medical Practice, well adapted to the use of Families."

The work appears to me to be thus adapted, for the following reasons:—

1. The matter it contains is sound and judicious, and sufficiently full and diversified for all the cases of disease in which families themselves should attempt to employ it. When more is needed, recourse should be had to professional aid.

2. The descriptions of diseases are generally correct, and their changes and stages well marked; and the style of the work is so simple and perspicuous, that no one at all acquainted with the English composition can misapprehend its meaning.

3. The compass of the work, embracing as it does every form of disease which an American Physician, in full practice, can expect to encounter in a lifetime, is sufficiently ample.

Wishing it, therefore, the reception and circulation, to which it appears to me to be entitled, I am, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

CH. CALDWELL, M. D.,
Professor of the Institutes of Medicine and Medical Jurisprudence.

P. S. Were it not that comparisons are apt to be held exceptionable, I would not hesitate to say, that I consider your "Family Practice" the most valuable work of the sort of which I have any knowledge.
C. C.

BRIGHT'S FAMILY PRACTICE.

I have examined Dr. Bright's "FAMILY PRACTICE," and feel assured that it is, on the whole, well adapted to the purpose for which it is written. I think the work is calculated to be eminently useful
S. D. GROSS, M. D., Professor of Surgery.
August, 1847.

I concur in the estimate expressed above by Dr. Gross.
H. MILLER, M. D.,
Professor of Obstetrics and Diseases of Women and Children.

I have examined "BRIGHT'S FAMILY PRACTICE" with some care, and find that it is plainly written, and contains much that is valuable. I believe the work is calculated to do much good.
J. COBB, M. D., Professor of Anatomy.

I have examined Dr. Bright's "FAMILY PRACTICE," and find it what it purports to be—a plain system of Medical Practice—which I can conscientiously recommend to families.
L. P. YANDELL, M. D., Professor of Physiology.

From Practising Physicians in Louisville.

I have examined with care Dr. Bright's "FAMILY PRACTICE," and find it a valuable work, well suited to the use of Planters and Families. It is plain and comprehensive, and the treatment conformable to the latest and most approved practice, and it affords me much pleasure to recommend it to the public.
J. C. GUNN, M. D.

I have examined "BRIGHT'S FAMILY PRACTICE." The work is not only the result of long experience, but a very judicious selection of the latest and most approved Medical authors, and will, no doubt, be of great service to families.
W. C. GALT, M. D.

I have examined "BRIGHT'S FAMILY PRACTICE," and do most unhesitatingly recommend it as a plain, practical work—useful to families.
C. PIRTLE, M. D.

I have examined "BRIGHT'S FAMILY PRACTICE," and take great pleasure in recommending it as a valuable work. suitable to the use of Families. Having practised Medicine fifteen years in Mississippi and Louisiana, I view this work as better adapted to the diseases of that region than any work of the kind I have ever seen.
RICHARD ANGEL, M. D.

We have examined Dr. Bright's "FAMILY PRACTICE," and feel no hesitation in recommending it to the public, as a book containing a variety of useful and valuable information. It is entirely practical in its designs; all technicalities are avoided, so as to render the author's meaning clear and plain to the unprofessional reader, for whom it is more particularly intended than for the profession, though the latter, and particularly the medical student, might increase his store of practical knowledge by a careful perusal of its pages. Dr. Bright's instruments for the application of caustic to the mouth of the uterus are ingenious, and no doubt will save the practitioner much trouble, and the patient a great deal of unnecessary pain.
U. E. EWING, M. D.
W. T. H. WINLOCK, M. D.
Louisville, June, 1847.

I have examined "BRIGHT'S FAMILY PRACTICE," and find in it plain and important practical principles in medicine, well adapted to the use of families.
WM. A. McDOWELL, M. D.

I have examined "BRIGHT'S FAMILY PRACTICE," and take pleasure in recommending it to all persons as a valuable work—in particular to families in the country.
J. W. KNIGHT, M. D.
Louisville, June, 1847

We have examined the medical work written by J. W. Bright, and take pleasure in recommending it to the public, as a work well calculated for the use of families.
JOHN M. TALBOT, M. D.
W. H. WAKEFIELD, M. D.
Louisville, June 18, 1847.

Dr. Bright: Dear Sir—I have looked into your work at such moments as my urgent labors for the season would afford me. It appears to be a work of great research, and is doubtless one of high merit. It is my wish that the reading public may be most thoroughly satisfied of the high appreciation put upon it.
B. W. DUDLEY, M. D.,
Prof. of Surgery in Transylvania University.
Lexington, Ky., Feb. 5, 1848.

BRIGHT'S FAMILY PRACTICE.

From Physicians in Memphis.

After a careful examination of Dr. Bright's "FAMILY PRACTICE," I have no hesitation in saying, that the practical precepts recommended by the Author are better adapted to the treatment of disease, as it prevails at the Southwest, than any other work of a similiar character, with which I am acquainted. GEO. R. GRANT, M. D.,
Professor of Theory and Practice of Medicine in the Memphis Medical College.

From the cursory examination which I have been enabled to make of Dr. Bright's work on the Practice of Physic, I have no hesitation in saying, that it is the best production of its kind now published. E. F. WATKINS, M. D
Memphis, Sept. 1, 1847.

We have examined Dr. Bright's "PLAIN SYSTEM OF MEDICAL PRACTICE," and are satisfied that it is better calculated for a safe guide to Families—especially those remote from a scientific physician—than any other work on Domestic Practice. We can therefore cheerfully recommend it as a plain and valuable work; in the main, well adapted to the purposes designed.
LEWIS SHANKS, M. D.
JNO. R. FRAYSER, M. D.
Memphis, Sept. 1, 1847.

From Physicians in Illinois.

Having been requested to examine "BRIGHT'S FAMILY PRACTICE," I have satisfied myself that it is superior to any work of the kind which has met my notice, both in its description of diseases and principles of treatment. HENRY WING, M. D.,
March 6, 1848. Prof. of Mat. Med., in Jacksonville Med. Coll., Ill.

TO THE PUBLIC.—Having examined Dr. Bright's "FAMILY PRACTICE OF MEDICINE" attentively, I have no hesitation in stating, that it is the best work of the kind now extant, in the English language, and is admirably adapted to the wants of western people.
Lexington, Morgan Co., Ill., March 6, 1848 C. H. KNIGHT, M. D.

BRIGHT'S PRACTICE

IS EMPHATICALLY THE BOOK FOR EVERY FAMILY IN THE UNITED STATES.

☞ **AGENTS WANTED** in every county of each State. Very large profits are allowed, and energetic men have made from $500 to $2,000 per annum by selling BRIGHT'S PRACTICE.

A Cash Capital of Eighty or One Hundred Dollars is requisite, as the Publishers sell exclusively for cash, to avoid charging an extra profit on those who pay, to make up for losses from those who do not pay. Consequently in no case will books be forwarded WITHOUT THE MONEY IN HAND. Persons wishing to have an agency, will address the Publishers.

MORTON & GRISWOLD, Publishers,
LOUISVILLE, KY.

REVISED AND ENLARGED

EDITION OF

GOODRICH'S

SCHOOL READER.

The following are supposed to be some of the peculiar excellencies of this SERIES, as a whole.

1. **Completeness,** embracing all that is required by the pupil from the Alphabet to the highest degree of accomplishment in the art of reading.

2. **Comprehensiveness,**—including all the approved helps and facilities both for teacher and learner.

3. **Progression,** step by step in an easy path, without confusion, breaks, or other impediments.

4. **Simplicity** and manliness of sentiment, which constitute the charm of Mr. Goodrich's style, acknowledged wherever the English language is read.

5. **Originality,** not a line having been borrowed from any other series; while every other reader of late date has taken more or less, and generally without acknowledgment, from them or other compositions by the same author.

6. **The Illustrations,** of the most beautiful character, introduced with profusion, in order to interest and excite the young mind, and develop its perceptive faculties.

7. **Mechanical Execution**—the paper being white and thick, the type large and clear, and the binding neat and substantial.

8. **Cheapness**—being sold at lower prices than works of inferior authors, and less merit

9. **Rhetorical Exercises**—affording most copious practical lessons in enunciation, articulation, inflection, emphasis, and accent.

10. **Moral Tendency**—inculcating by familiar precepts and pleasing illustrations, a sense of justice, a feeling of kindly charity, a reverence for religion, a regard for the rights, feelings, interests and characters of others, a love of the works of nature, and a reverent affection for their beneficent Author.

GOODRICH'S FIRST SCHOOL READER

72 *pages*, 18*mo*.

1. It has sixty-nine beautiful engravings of simple but very interesting subjects.

2. It begins with very short words, in very short sentences, accompanying an appropriate engraving. In this respect the author has pursued the plain originally used by him many years since in "Peter Parley's Primer," and subsequently limited and copied by other books.

3. It contains eighteen lessons in articulation, comprising all the vowel sounds, based on the principle of teaching **one thing only at a time,** and making the pupil perfect in that one thing, by **frequent repetition.**

4. Preceding each reading lesson is a spelling exercise, containing the more difficult words.

5. In the lessons, Polysyllables are *neither* accented *nor* divided, for several reasons. 1. Words cannot be divided without often misleading. 2. The pupil should learn to read words as he will afterwards meet with them in other books. This last reason applies to the marks sometimes used to distinguish the various sounds of the vowels.

6. It is entirely original, being written with the racy, genial and manly simplicity peculiar to the author.

7. A knowledge of points and stops is given in the course of the book in familiar language.

8. The type is beautifully clear and distinct.

GOODRICH'S SECOND SCHOOL READER.

144 *pages*, 18*mo*.

1. This work, formerly published as the First Reader, having been revised, enlarged and improved, and being now preceded by a new introductory volume, is called the Second Reader.

2. It contains about fifty beautiful engravings.

3. The lessons are progressive, rather harder than in the First Reader, less so than in the Third.

4. It contains 25 lessons on articulation, comprising all the consonant sounds of the language—with a view to produce by repetition of one thing at a time, the attainments of a full, clear, distinct enunciation.

5. Preceding each lesson is a Spelling Exercise, containing the most difficult words.

6. Questions follow each lesson, designed to ensure a thorough understanding of the subject. These may be multiplied by the judicious teacher.

7. A familiar explanation is given of *punctuation, articulation, emphasis, &c.*

8. Its lessons cannot be surpassed by any in the language, in point of adaptation to the wants of young learners.

9. The type is large and very clear, while by a compact arrangement, many new lessons have been inserted.

GOODRICH'S THIRD SCHOOL READER,

218 *pages*, 18*mo*.

1. This work, originally published as the Second Reader, having been revised and enlarged, is now called the "Third Reader."

2. It contains a great variety of beautiful engravings.

3. The lessons are progressive, carrying the learner onward, step by step.

4. It contains lessons on articulation, arranged upon the principle of teaching *one thing at a time*, and of *continual repetition*.

5. Preceding each lesson is a spelling exercise, with the words properly divided.

6. Following each lesson are questions to excite and interest the pupil.

7. Much useful information is given respecting the different kinds of type used in printing, with lessons in *italic letters, script, &c.*

8. To ensure greater interest in the lessons, there is a continuity of narrative between many of the lessons, while they are also complete in themselves, so as to be read separately.

9. Prefixed to each lesson is a list of the most common and vulgar errors of pronunciation.

GOODRICH'S FOURTH SCHOOL READER.

240 *pages*, 12*mo*.

1. This work, originally published as the Third, having been revised, improved and enlarged to nearly double its former contents, is now the Fourth Reader.

2. In this, as in all the others, while many facilities are offered to the progress of the pupil, it is not by taking away the necessity of exertion, but by bringing his faculties into play, and inducing him cheerfully and efficiently to help himself.

3. An exercise in definitions precedes each lesson, explaining the meaning of the words as used in the context.

4. Rules for Reading are prefixed to the book. These rules are simple, intelligible, and practical, and their efficiency ensured by a peculiar system of questions attached to the lessons.

5. It is abundantly illustrated with beautiful engravings.

6. Errors of pronunciation are pointed out, and questions asked in connexion with each lesson.

7 Appended to many of the lessons are remarks of an explanatory or critical character.

8. It contains exercises in Elocution of a most useful and practical kind.

9. For simplicity, interest, animation, pure moral tendency, and beauty of style and sentiment, a more delightful body of reading lessons was never before brought together.

Goodrich's Fifth School Reader.

384 pages, 12mo.

1. This work, formerly the Fourth Reader, having been revised, improved, and enlarged to nearly double its former contents, is now the Fifth Reader.

2. By means of a large page, as large, in fact, as an ordinary octavo page, with clear, compact type, and a neat arrangement, nearly twice the matter is given of ordinary works, at same price.

3. An exercise in Spelling and Defining precedes each lesson. This exercise contains the words that the learner is least likely to know. The definitions of upwards of three thousand words, in the sense in which they are used in the context, are found in this and the preceding book.

4. The lessons afford a selection of the very best extracts in the English language, and comprise more than usual of the highest efforts of modern and living masters.

5. It contains an ample number of pages devoted to rules and exercises in Elocution.

6. By a new arrangement, the sequence of the lessons has been made more uniformly progressive

7. The interests of religion, morality, and good manners, have always been carefully considered in the selection.

S. G. Goodrich's Primary Historical Series.

FIVE VOLS., EACH 216 pp., 16mo.

Parley's Primary History of North America, comprising the United States, with notices of Mexico, Canada, &c.
Parley's Primary History of South America.
Parley's Primary History of Europe
Parley's Primary History of Africa, in preparation.
Parley's Primary History of Asia, including BIBLE HISTORY, in prep

These handsome little books form a series of primary histories. The mechanical execution is very creditable to the publishers. The following peculiarities render them especially *suitable for beginners,* for whose use they are intended.
The remarkable abundance and beauty of the pictorial illustrations.
The use of maps in the text, thus uniting geography with history.
The striking simplicity and force of the style, which is also chaste and finished
The freshness with which all the topics are invested.
The introduction of new material, wanting not only in ordinary school books, but even in elaborate historical works.

NEW AND ENLARGED EDITION

OF THE

CHRISTIAN PSALMIST,

A COLLECTION OF TUNES AND HYMNS

For the use of Worshipping Assemblies and Sunday Schools.

NUMERAL EDITION.—Compiled from many Authors, by SILAS W. LEONARD and A. D. FILLMORE. Revised by Rev. WM. GUNN, of Ky., Rev. THOS. HARRISON, of Ohio, and by the AUTHORS.

It is therefore both a Hymn Book and Tune Book in one.

Bound in Sheep, or Extra Cloth,	75 cts.	Bound in Super Gilt Cloth	$1 2
" Morocco, gilt,	$1 00	" Turkey Gilt Cloth	2 00

BUTLER'S
SCHOOL GRAMMARS.

The Series consists of Two Parts,

I. BUTLER'S INTRODUCTORY LESSONS IN ENGLISH GRAMMAR.—For Beginners.

II. BUTLER'S PRACTICAL GRAMMAR.

Instead of offering to the public their own commendations of these books, the publishers have the pleasure of inviting attention to the following communications:

1. From Rev. J. M'Clintock, D.D., who is well known throughout the United States as one of the most accomplished scholars and skilful educators. As a professor in the highest institutions of learning, as the author of a most successful series of classical text books, and as editor of the Quarterly Review published by the Northern Methodist Episcopal Church, in the city of New York, his reputation is as wide as the country.

"Butler's 'Practical Grammar of the English Language,' is an exceedingly well-conceived and well-executed book. It is scientific, not only in its groundwork (which every elementary book ought to be), but also in its practical methods and devices, where empiricism is too often substituted for science. As every lesson can be put to use at once, the learner makes real progress with every page. I have seen no Elementary English Grammar that pleases me better—or so well.

JOHN M'CLINTOCK

New York, March 28, 1849.

2. From George B. Emerson, of Boston, whose commendation of any text book is conclusive evidence of its great merits. He stands foremost among the men to whom New England looks up, as the highest authority in all matters connected with education.

Dear Sir—I have hardly had an hour since I received your note accompanying this Grammar, which was not absolutely bespoken for some other purpose. On looking over the book rapidly, I see many things in it which are excellent. The definitions are remarkably simple and clear; the rules are short and comprehensive; and the arrangement is so good, and the exercises so well selected, that a tolerable teacher might be very successful in teaching the principles of English Grammar by the aid of it. It forms, moreover, in the way it is intended to be used, what every Grammar for beginners ought to form—an introduction to the art and practice of composition.

The names of the tenses are far more sensible and philosophical than those found in most Grammars, which indeed are often quite wrong and absurd; and the principles of Syntax and of Prosody are singularly well condensed, without becoming too abstract and obscure. In a future edition, I hope he will give the same condensation to the rules for Punctuation.

I am, dear sir, very truly yours,

GEO. B. EMERSON

Oct. 27, 1845.

To J. G. Palfrey, LL.D., D.D., Secretary of State.

3. The following are extracts from the opinions of distinguished scholars:—

From E. D. North, Prof. of Rhetoric in Yale College.

"It is the most scholarly and philosophic Grammar that I know."

A. D. Lord, of Ohio.

"I consider it one of the best works we have on the subject."

Rev. B. P. Aydelote, of Cincinnati.

"An improvement, in every respect, upon preceding works."

Rich. H. Lee, Prof. Washington Coll.

"I heartily recommend it as the best now to be got."

John Lewis, of Llangollen.

"It is really what its title indicates—A Practical Grammar."

Jno. B. L. Soule, Terre Haute.

"Far in advance of any now in use."

E. A. Smith, Sup't of Common Schools, Statetown, N Y.

"I prefer it before Brown's and Bullions'."

Moses Soule, North Bridgton

"My beau ideal of an English Grammar."

BRONSON'S

SYSTEM OF ELOCUTION,

OR,

Mental and Vocal Philosophy, for the Development of the Mind and Body.

COMPRISING

1. *Two or Three Hundred of the Choicest Anecdotes in our Language.*
2. *Three Thousand Oratorical and Poetical Readings and Recitations.*
3. *Five Thousand Proverbs, Maxims, Sayings, Themes, and Laconics.*
4. *And Several Hundred Elegant Engravings, to Illustrate the Work.*

IT CONTAINS:

I. All the Principles of Elocution, in accordance with Physiological and Mental Science: II. SIX FULL LENGTH VIEWS of the Nerves of Organic Life, of Respiration, of the Nerves of Sense and Motion, and of all the Muscles and Bones of the whole Body, clothed and unclothed: III. Natural and Deformed Chests, Positions of Ladies and Gentlemen, of their Bodies, Hands, Arms, and Feet, and ONE HUNDRED Full Length Oratorical and Poetical Portraits: IV. FORTY-FOUR MOUTHS, showing every position to produce the FORTY-FOUR sounds of our Language: V. The Common, and New Mode of Learning the Letters, of Spelling, and of Teaching Children to Read, involving the Science of Phonology: VI. Several Hundred Jaw or Muscle-Breakers, for Training the Voice, while "Laughter holds both of his sides." VII. FIFTY ENGRAVINGS, exhibiting all the Phases of Passion, with appropriate examples to illustrate them: VIII. An immense number of Questions and Subjects suggested for Lyceums, Debating Societies, and Social Parties: IX. The largest and best collection of READINGS, RECITATIONS, and DECLAMATIONS, including those interspersed with his Popular Lectures, involving every variety of Thought and Feeling, and ranging from the deepest Tragedy to the highest Comedy; with something on every page, calculated to make one serious and gay: X. By being printed in double columns, and certain kinds of type, it is designed, on philosophical principles, to facilitate the arts of Reading, Memorizing, and the Preservation of the Eyesight—three important points of attainment: XI. It is expressly prepared for use in all SCHOOLS, ACADEMIES, and COLLEGES, Male and Female; and also with particular reference to Private Readers and Learners: XII. In a word, it is just such a book, as every one, having heard of it, will Feel and Think he must have, and cannot do without it.

ITS COMPARATIVE MERITS.

I. An examination of its Contents and their Arrangement, will enable one to institute a comparison between this work, and all others on the same subject.

II. It is in perfect harmony with what is known of all that is NATURAL, HUMAN, and DIVINE.

III. Its foundations are deeply laid in the Philosophy of Mind and Voice—Spirit and Matter; and the principles are of a far-reaching and comprehensive nature, tending to produce a great revolution in the Art of Reading and Speaking with Science and Effect, and the development of the WHOLE MAN, Soul, Mind, and Body.

IV. Its method is that of ANALYSIS and SYNTHESIS, and is altogether Progressive and Practical in its characteristics.

V. Although but ONE Elocutionary Principle is presented, specifically, on any page, yet each Elementary page contains, incidentally, ALL the Principles of Elocution.

VI. These Principles have never been known to fail, when faithfully applied, to enable one to Read, Speak, and Blow on Wind Instruments, for hours in succession, without Hoarseness, or injurious Exhaustion; and they tend to the Preservation from, and Cure of Diseases of the Throat and Lungs, Dyspepsia, and other Complaints incidental to Public Speaking, and a Sedentary Life.

VII. It is BEAUTIFULLY and SUBSTANTIALLY got up in the octavo form, of between three and four hundred pages, and includes a greater variety of Prose and Poetry than any other system of Elocution, and contains DOUBLE the amount of reading matter found in any similar work in the United States, and yet—THE PRICE IS ONLY ONE DOLLAR.